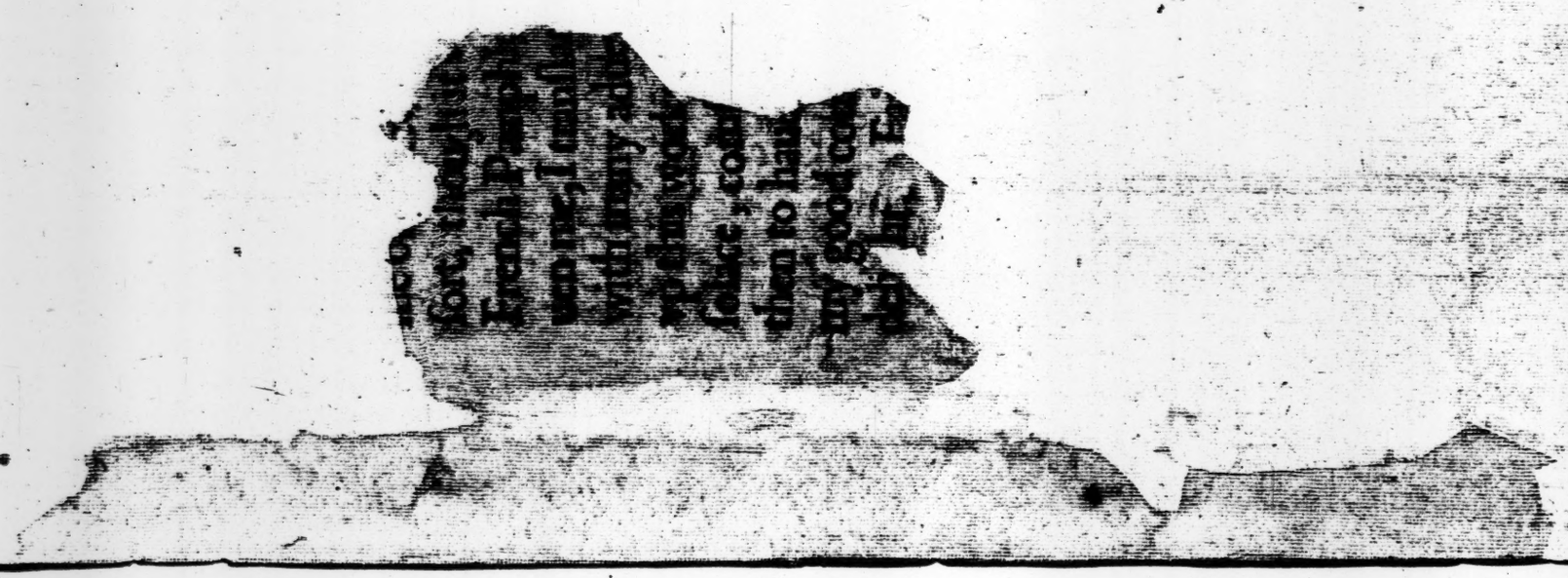
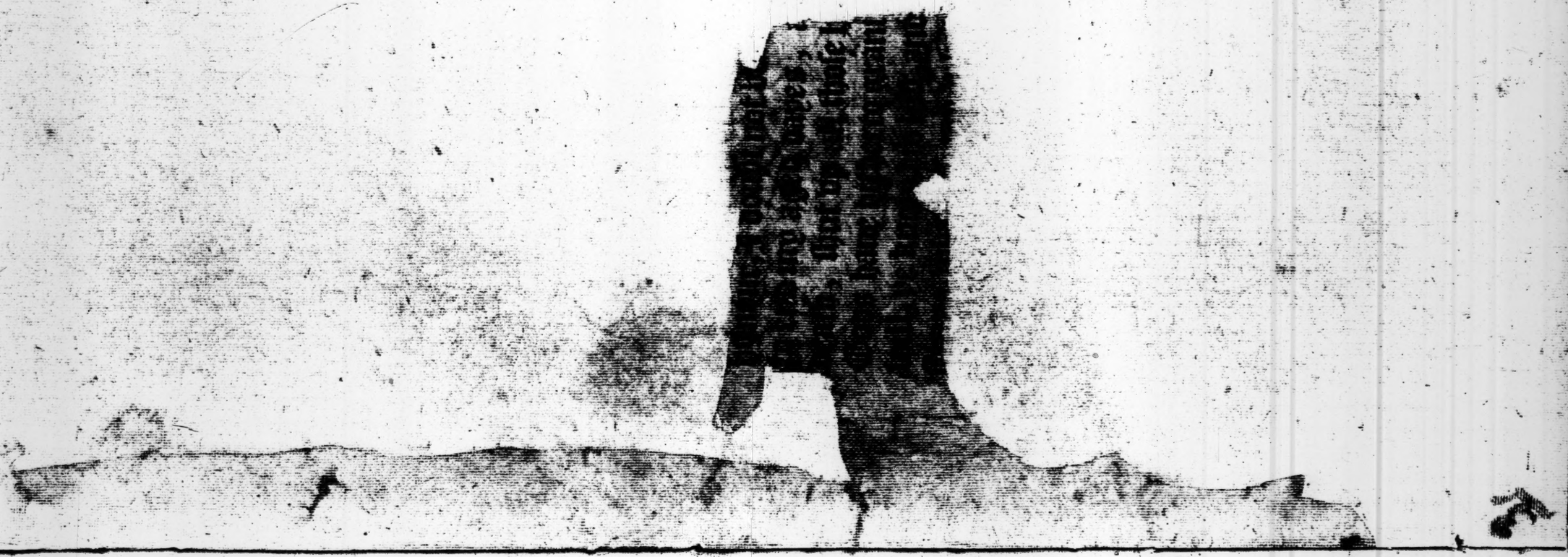








tening vs disgrace; for that we neither feare him nor his tormẽts. For death which the Gods haue appointed, a true full token to most men to warne them to leaue their worldly pleasures, and to resigne their vitall breath, is vnto vs a most swéete and pleasant obiect and yeeldeth vs comfort, being the only mean by which we may escape infamy and shame. Death therefore shall free vs from the tyrants intended villany, and redéeme our kinred from disgrace.

Perina glad that her sister concluded so well to her liking, said:

Father, séeing then that (as my sister hath well declared) death must be our redéemer, I beséech you not to torment your old age with anxitie and griefe for vs; and you brother though we die, may passe your youth in pleasing rest. And therefore let my sister and me care for this matter which toucheth vs only, and feare not that by meanes of our cowardise ye shall reape any dishonor. And séeing that of all euils the least must be chosen, and the greatest auoyded, let me perswade you to looke to your selues and auoyd the tyrants anger, [illegible] sure to incurre, if you resist his will & obey not his [illegible] accomplishing your promise made vnto his [illegible] Wherefore father send vs, and vsing your selfe [illegible] times wrong, consider your age, which requireth [illegible] your delight, comfort your selfe with the presence [illegible] ther Periorio, in viewing whose vertues and [illegible] may easily forget vs, though we were [illegible] tall maydes. So shall both you and [illegible] and my sister and I gaine honour and [illegible] not the tyrant, he may tyrannise [illegible] (which neuer will yeeld to bee [illegible] to be conquered by him that is otherwise [illegible] abhominous affections. To be short, [illegible] rant nor all his menaces shall be able to corrupt [illegible] that we haue death tyed at our girdles, which shall [illegible] all the tyrants of the world can [illegible]

Old Camillo, seeing that both his [illegible]

endued with such an hautie and valiant minde, as a man that had forgotten all occasion of sorrow, with a pleasant countenance replied.

Most hautie Euphilia, and couragious Perina, I haue followed your counsels, and as you see, doffed off all sorrow: Now therfore attentiuely heare my counsel, and prepare your selues to put it in execution. My intent is such, that if ye die, your brother and I wil not liue to morne. Let vs therefore disguise our selues, and to morrow morning depart from Venice before day. The Gods will fauour vs and defend vs from Nero his hands, seeing that we (as our conscience witnesseth) to free their sacred constitutions from violence, haue left our possessions, lands, castle and substance, committing our selues to Fortunes mercy, which is meere crueltie. But if our flight be so vnhappie that we be ouertaken by the tyrant; then, as we hoped all to liue, can we but all die. And seeing we cannot liue the one without the other, let vs all liue togither, or all die togither. These hoarie haires of mine, are messengers of death, and warne me to prepare my selfe for the graue, but your golden lockes and the glorie of your youth, forbiddeth death to approach, and shall then ye be readie to die, and I that stand with one foote in my graue flie from him whom I cannot ouerrun? No no, louing children, I seeke not to liue, but to haue you liue. And therefore yeeld to my request, and liue with me, if ye will not haue me die with you.

Euphilia and Perina, hearing that their father was so desirous to abandon all his liuings for their cause, fell downe on their knees before his feete, and praied him to command them to do whatsoeuer he pleased, and they would be most readie to execute his pleasure. Camillo therefore taking them vp by the hand, willed them to prepare themselues to depart from *Mantua* with him & Perierio the next morning, taking their best Iewels with them, and all their readie gold. Camillo cloathed himselfe like a shepheard, and Perierio, least his father should be knowne plaid the Barber, and shaued his beard cleane off to the chinne; and apparelled himselfe like a Butchers

chers boy, Euphilia and Perina, (whose beauty and fauour was such as could not but be knowne) scarce able all night to imagine how they might disguise themselues in such maner that they might passe vnknowne, at last concluded to cloath themselues like Market women, and seeing the winde blew something strongly, they thereby toke occasion to muffle their faces with their handkercheffes, as if they had the tothache. Thus the old shepheard, yong Butcher, and muffled Market women, were so cunningly disguised, that no man thought so much as to dreame, that they should be sir Camillo, with his sonne and his daughters. So that they passed not only through the Citie but the Country also, vnknowne to any man. Neither did they rest vntill they were so farre from Venice that they thought themselues to be out of daunger. Yet they durst not staie in any place of *Italy*, for feare least search being made after them, they might fall into the tyrants hands: and therfore trauelled on daily, vntill they came into *Spaine*, and there in a solitary place where no kinde of people but shepheardes did resort, they built a pretie house, and bought a flock of sheep, determining to liue shepheards vntill such time as the Gods and their Fortune would suffer them to return to their countrey.

These shepheards had not dwelt in their new built house the space of fire moneths or thereabout, but they had perfectly learned both to vnderstand and speake the Castilian tong, insomuch that the same language was as easie vnto them as their owne. For there being but litle difference betwixt the Italian and Spanish tongues: (which are of neare affinitie,) and these noble shepheards being wonderful wittie and ingenious, it could not be but that they should in short space apply their Italian tong to the pronunciatiõ of the Spanish words. For, all the shepheards that in these quarters dwelled, as they did maruell at the supernaturall beautie of these strange shepheards, so did they thinke it a miracle that they had in so short a time learned to talke with the Spanish shepheards, & that so eloquently, and with such a grace, that many toke pleasure

to

to talke with them, and fewe departed from them without bearing away that which was sufficient to instruct them in their owne language. In so much that diuerse of them being more curious then others, when they went to talke with the new shepheards, carried paper bookes with them to note vp such phrases as Perierio and his sisters vsed in their talke. Besides the Castilian tong, they had also learned to plaie vpon all such rurall and pastoral Instruments as were by the shepheards of that quarter vsed. On which Instruments Perierio plaied with such dexteritie, that the inhabitants thereabouts thought that Orpheus had bene raised from hell to fill the aire with the agreeing noyse of his Instrument, and to delight the shepheards of that country with his pleasant notes. Euphilia and Perina, not much inferiour vnto Perierio in that qualitie, yet far his superiours in singing a part in Musicke by reason that their voices were clearer then his, when they sung vnto their brothers Instrument, moued the other shepheardes to wonder at their celestiall melodie, and became so hereticall, that they thought Perierio to be some God, and his sisters two Goddesses, supposing it a thing impossible that mortall creatures should be endued with such heauenly and immortall conditions. But whatsoeuer they were thought to be, they were so beloued of all the Spanish shepheards, that no man thought himself happie that had not perfect friendship and alliance with them. Yea if the least iniury of the world had bene offered to Perierio, his aged father, or his beautifull sisters, they were all readie to reuenge it, not as a priuate quarrell, but as some common and publicke wrong done to the whole Country, and all the inhabitants thereof.

Old Camillo, therefore seeing that he and his children were so beloued of all the Country, and taking great delight in the swetnesse of the aire of that clima, began to build farmes and to purchase land, so that Fortune fauouring him, he became in short time wealthie and rich, and of great credit. Perierio his sonne, toke great delight in hunting and fowling, often committing his flocke to his sisters care, who kept both his sheepe

and their owne with such diligence, that all men marked that they were not careleſſe, but painful and induſtrious. Yea they wonne ſuch fauour and commendation in euery mans eye, as their beautie was not only praiſed in the Countrey, but alſo ſpoken of in Cities farre from them. And yet was their ſubmiſſe modeſtie ſuch, that although their praiſe daily encreaſed, yet they nothing puffed vp with pride, humbled themſelues, and ſcorned not to kéep company with the baſeſt ſwain in all the Countrey. Euery day they went forth with their flockes to the field, defending their faces from the heate of the Sunne, with no other ſcarfe or vale then a garland made of ſundrie kindes of flowers, that attire becomming them ſo brauely, that they ſéemed to be daughters vnto the Goddeſſe Flora for their exquiſit beautie, marching with their ſheepe through the pleaſant downes and gréene fieldes, more like to ſome heauenly Nymphs then mortall women. If it chanced that there were a méeting of all the Farmers daughters, then were they (I meane Euphilia and Perina) bid thither as the miſtreſſes and chéefeſt of the feaſt: Perierio their brother, likewiſe miſſed no feaſt nor game, being inuited by the richeſt and chiefeſt Farmers ſonnes; whereof many became ſuitors vnto his ſiſters, and many of their ſiſters enamoured of his beautifull and comely diſpoſition, wiſhed themſelues married vnto him. But he delighting more in tuning his paſtorall Harpe, reioyced his companions with a round or twain, whileſt that others Courted their miſtreſſes, not ſo much becauſe he would not debaſe himſelfe to loue a ſhepheard, as for that he ſhunned ſo lordly a maiſter as Cupid, eſtéeming his libertie and frédome from fancie, the only cauſe of all his ioy and pleaſure. But fortune who thitherto had fauoured both Perierio and his ſiſters, began to withdraw her louely lookes from them, and in lewe of a ſmiling countenance, intended to ſhew them a lowring face and frowning forehead. For not long after, it chanced vpon a pleaſant morning betimes, before Phœbus golden lynes had gréeted the Southern plains, ỳ Perierio hauntin[illegible] his accuſtomed hunt, in a paſſing pleaſant wood not

farre from the place where his sisters fed their flocks, (hauing left his shéepe vnto their kéeping as he was wont to do) espied a braue damosell, her beautie being comparable to the colour that Venus face is dyed withall; sitting on a hillocke, and resting her head on her hand. At the sight whereof, Perierio greatly amazed, retired behind a bush, where he not seene, might perfectly both see her, and heare what she said: for he marked by her countenance ý she was in a melancholy mode, and vexed with extraordinary griefe. Her words were these, being expressed with a lamentable voyce, mouing the verie trées and bushes to yéeld teares.

Ah Fortune, as often as Phœbus appeareth in the woods, as often as he riseth in his Easterne glorie, and as often as his penetrating rayons warne mé to leaue my restlesse rest, and harnesse my selfe to my endlesse toyle, and neuer ceasing labour; so often thou doest renue my griefe and multiply my sorrowes. What, Fortune hast thou made all other women so happie through my mishap, that to make me an instance of the miserablest wight that liueth, thou hast deliuered all others from their miseries, to throw them all on me? O most iniust dome! O most cruell Goddesse! Though by reason of thy excéeding iniustice, thou deseruest to be crossed out of the catalogue o' diuine powers. And therewith she rose from the hillocke, and looking round about what way she might take, she espied Perierio behinde the bush, comming towards her, which she marking, staid vntill he came neare her, and saluting him with a most gratious countenance said. Shepheard, (for so much thy apparell betokeneth, though thy beautie be such, as maketh me to mistrust it, and thinke that thou art but a counterfeyt shepheard) pardon me if I be too bold in demanding thy name and country; which if it may please thée to tell me, thou shalt binde me to owe thée a good turne. Perierio, (whose heart was pierced with Cupids shaft, and on suddaine made captiue to that Lord whose seruice he so shunned) so gazed on this Ladie (for she was no lesse, as you shall hereafter learn) in whose beauty al his desire rested, that he could scarce

ſpeake one woꝛd; at laſt, plucking vp his ſpirites, anſwered. Madam (foꝛ your exquiſit perfections and ſtately countenance deſerues no leſſe) where no offence is committed, pardon is craued but in vaine; I am an Italian boꝛne, called Perierio, the happieſt man that euer was named, if occaſion were pꝛeſented wherein I might do any ſeruice acceptable vnto you Madame. I thanke thée Perierio (replied the yong Ladie) foꝛ this thy vndeſerued curteſie; and ſéeing I am not able at this time to make thée any recompence, I can but pꝛay the Gods to grant thée thy hearts deſire. And with that, ſhoting into the midſt of the woods, ſhe was out of Perierios ſight, befoꝛe he thought ſhe was departed. Foꝛ when ſhe heard by his name and country, that he was not the man ſhe doubted of, and gathering by his countenance that he was ſodeinly ſtroke in loue of her, leaſt he ſhould become troubleſome and impoꝛtunate vnto her, haſted thence, ſuppoſing that ſhe being out of ſight, ſhould alſo be out of the ſhepheards minde; and that by reaſon of her abſence, he ſhould recouer his libertie & frédome which her pꝛeſence had cauſed him to loſe. But alaſſe, where ſhe thought by her departure to eaſe his griefe, contrarily ſhe encreaſed his paſſions. Foꝛ he ſéeing that the ſumme of his conceiued pleaſures were fled, and ſhe miſſing, in whoſe golden lockes his ſoule was intangled, began to crie out with a loud and pitifull voyce. My ſoule, my ſoule, whither art thou fled? Why haſt thou left my bodie, ſéeing that thou being ſeparated from me, I may not liue? Ah poꝛe Perierio! wꝛetched Perierio! Die: die miſerable Perierio. Ah cruell Gods, that haue alotted me a life woꝛſe then death, and a body without ſoule. Ah diſcurtuous Ladie, & is this ỹ gratefulneſſe you wiſhed to ſhew me, as a due recompence foꝛ my readineſſe in doing you pleaſure? Is this the thankfulneſſe you talked of? Is this the good turne you ſhould owe me? To ſteale away my heart, and carry my ſoule with thée, impꝛiſoned in the ſnares of thy alluring lookes; leauing my bodie bꝛeathleſſe, and ſo giuing me ſufficient occaſiõ to accuſe them both of theft and murther, cõſidering that thou haſt robbed me of my ſoule,

...no thereby depꝛiued me of life. Foꝛ now haue I no life of mine owne, but liue only in thée. Ah vnhappie man that liue, and know not where I liue, foꝛ I liue in that bodie which is in place, as farre vnknowne vnto me, as that bodie it ſelfe. So that I liue in a bodie, I know not what, which vnknowne bodie is in a place I know not where. Foꝛgiue me Cupid diuine poẅer and mightie God, I confeſſe to haue offended in contemning and neglecting their puiſſance: Which my contempt, thou haſt puniſhed with a paine the like neuer heard of beforꝛe. The dart penetrated into the verie inmoſt part of my heart, and forꝛced me to yéeld to loue. Séeing then I loue, and am inrolled in the ſcroẅle of thoſe that follow thy bands, as a true and valoꝛous Captaine lead me to the knoẅledge of that which I loue. Foꝛ I doubt not but that thou which haſt had the puiſſance to make me loue, and that ſo ſtrangely; art likeẅiſe able to make me know whom I loue. Thus Perierio after that he had with many ſighs and teares bewailed the loſſe of his foꝛmer freédome, began at length to conſider, that the accuſtomed houre of his returning to dinner was paſt, & therfoꝛe leaſt his father ſhould maruell at his long abſence, and by reaſon thereof fall into ſuſpition, leaſt ſome miſchance had befallen him (foꝛ old men are alẅaies carefull of their childꝛen, and as often as they be out of ſight, ſo often do they déem them to be loſt) he moꝛe like a ſhadoẅ then a man, croſſed the néereſt ẅay homeẅards. Where he found his aged father ſléeping, foꝛ, the heauineſſe he ẅas in by reaſon of Perierios abſence, rocked him a ſléepe: but aſſoone as he heard Perierio, he aẅaked, and then they fell cloſely to their cheare, though Perierios minde ranne moꝛe on his vnknoẅne miſtreſſe then his preſent meate.

Whileſt that theſe tẅo ẅere at dinner, Euphilia and Perina, to ſhunne the extreame heate of Phœbus, mounted in his meridian pꝛide, ẅent ẅith their ſhéepe toẅard the ẅood ſide, to take the aduantage of the high trées ẅhich yéelded a moſt pleaſant ſhadoẅ: Where they ſitting togither, began to take their Oaten Pipes and ſing. Euphilia began in this maner.

Whileſt

Whileſt *Thaëtons* ſage fire,
his ſcorching beames
On th'earth doth caſt and moue,
the ſacred crue:
Of Nymphs moſt chaſte to ſeeke
the ſiluer ſtreames;
Therein to bathe their hands
of Chriſtall hue:
My Pype ſhall moue the ayre
with her ſound:
To ſend downe drops and wet
the ſcorched ground.

Perina.

Whilſt bright *Apollo* in his higheſt ſeate,
With fierie lynes doth burne the tender graſſe:
My notes ſhall pierce the skies, and *Ioue* entreat,
To bid the winds repreſſe their furious blaſts.
That ſweetly breathing on vs in the field,
The glittering leaues a pleaſant noyſe may yeeld.

Euphilia.

The chirping byrds now do moleſt the aire:
And to the cloudes complaine of ſummers heate:
The hunter ceaſeth to purſue the haire,
And fowlers leaue their praie for fainting ſweate.
Now therefore ſhall my voyce the skyes aſcend,
To moue the Gods this harmfull heate to mend.

Perina.

Now do the ſimple ſheepe to ſhadow flie,
The Traueller by *Cynthias* light is lead:
To ſhunne the rayes which ſparkling down the skie,
Proceed from fiery *Phœbus* golden head.
My Pype ſhall therefore to the clouds complain,
Reſoluing them in ſhewers of wiſhed raine.

VVhat an excellent matter is it (saide Euphilia) sister Perina, that we here leading this country life, and being separated from the noyse and tempestuous vproares and broyles which commonly are raised in the proud Courts of Princes, should enioy such extreame pleasure, as we do in these pleasant groues, sometimes being in the shadow, sometimes sitting on the bankes of the delectable Riuer, and sometimes walking in the darke groues, where we both fence our face from Phœbus iniurie, and delight our eares with the naturall Musick of the singing birds. I promise you truly (quoth Perina) I am of opinion that the noyse which the wind maketh among the trées, doth delight and recreate the hearts of men, more then the fond noyse of some people when there is a great assembly. For there the greatest pleasure, is mœre griefe; proud Maiestie and highnesse, nothing else but vanitie; feasts and games, nothing but troubles and tempest; honour and renowne, nothing but blindcrours; & most commonly we find, that among them that delight in that kinde of life, words and thoughts are different, the tong pronouncing otherwise then theheart meaneth. But here (said Euphilia) ambition laieth not her bayt, neither hath auarice or couetousnesse any place here. The people doth not here aspire to honours, nor sue for dignities: but men liue frée from passions and perturbations in all vertue and simplicitie. Here raineth litle or no malice, but all thinges are ruled by iustice. Neither doth the simple shepheard (quoth Perina) séeke out new partes of the worlde, nor aduenture into straunge countries committing himselfe neither to the cruell furious windes, nor vnmercifull waues to enlarge his treasure, or augment his riches. And yet he liueth as contentedly with that litle which he hath, as he that doth abound in rich possessions and great reuenues.

As they were thus discoursing, they séemed to heare the voyce of some distressed person, and Euphilia rising, espied a shepheard resting his backe against the trunke of a trée; but she hoping to gather the summe of his griefe by the sense of his complaint, stoped immediatly, applying her eare to the shep-

heards

heards words, which were not vnlike to these.

Ah loue, thou canst not inuent any worse torment then I feele, nor thou Fortune canst be more variable and inconstant, then thou art vnto me. And it is impossible to find a hart so bereft of all hope, and yet so content in suffering paine, as mine, whereof loue is the only cause, which vpholdeth my languishing breath, to the end that I may endure the grief which continually vexeth me. But when shall my teares & life take end: when shall my torment cease? when shall my sighs bring forth my heart with them?

And therewith he toke his way straight toward the place where Euphilia and Perina sate. Whither he arriued so sorrowfull, so weary and so greeued, that it seemed that Fortune pitying his case, had purposely sent him to that place to comfort him and asswage his dolours, not only by meanes of the cleare water which did spring out of the fountain whither the shepheards accustomed to lead their sheepe to drinke: but also by reason of the pleasantnesse of the place, the shadow of the trees, and exceeding beautie of these two noble shepheards. In so much, that all these things caused him to thinke that he had receiued some solace, though the importance of that which he sought, and the desire he had to finde the same, gaue him no leisure to rest in that place. Yet was he being a stranger, so curteously enterteined by the two sisters, that he deemed himself not a litle happie to haue lighted on such company. Wherefore he being entreated by them to goe with them to their lodging to eate something, and to refresh himselfe with such dainties as their country manner afforded, could not but graunt their request, and so followed them vnto their fathers house. Where he was receiued of aged Camillo and his sonne, not as a stranger, but as one that had bene of their neare kindred and affinitie. For they marking his singular beautie and perfection of bodie, his excellent grace in speaking, his sharpe wit, and his comely behauiour, thought him worthie of all the curtesie they could imagine to shewe him. Supper being done, olde Camillo toke his leaue of the strange shepheard, and went to his rest.

reſt. But Perierio and his ſiſters keeping the ſhepheard company, led him into the Orchard to take the euening ayre, after that Phœbus had ſhut vp his light in the Weſterne parts. And Euphilia deſirous to knowe what ſiniſter chaunce had brought the ſhepheard into ſuch a Chaos of cares and world of ſorrowes, began thus to be inquiſitiue of his Fortune.

Gentle ſhepheard, ſeeing that the night is no time to trauell, and you are ſo tyred that you are like to fall in great danger of ſome ſore diſeaſe, vnleſſe you looke to your ſelfe and reſt your weary limmes, I heartily pray you to ſtaie with vs this night, and you ſhall haue no worſe bed then where my brother lieth on, nor worſe bedfellow then himſelfe. And for as much as the pleaſantneſſe of this cole aire is ſuch, that it enticeth and prouoketh vs to recreate our ſelues therein: if that you will whileſt we expect the comming of the darke night, vnfold the cauſe of this your wandring iourny vnto vs, and make vs partakers of your euill and aduerſe fortune, we ſhal thinke vs to be greatly beholding vnto you. The ſhepheard wold not be long entreated by ſo excellent perſons, but walking with them in a pleaſant arbour of Eglentine, began to diſcourſe after this maner.

Gentle ſhepheards, the manifold benefits which it hath pleaſed you to heape on me being a meere ſtranger, vnworthie by my deſerts of the leaſt curteſie in ỹ worlde, bind me to yéeld vnto whatſoeuer ye can demaund of me, as far as my ſimple power ſtretcheth. And therefore although my euill be of ſuch nature that it may not be communicated vnto all kinds of perſons, yet the opinion which I conceiue of your deſerts, and the valure which your beautie bewrayeth, conſtraineth me to make an open rehearſall of all my forepaſt life, if I may terme that life, which I would willingly counterpoyſe and chaunge with death. Know therefore gentle ſhepheards, that I am called Marcelio, and that my vocation and eſtate is far contrary to that which my coate ſheweth. I was borne at *Soldino*, the principall and chiefe Citie of the prouince of *Candalia*, and my parentes were of great authoritie, abounding in wealth and riches.

riches. I haue bene brought vp euen from my childhood in the Court of ỹ *Luſion* King, where I was much made of, & deerly beloued, not of the principall Peeres only, but alſo of the King himſelfe. In ſo much that he would not ſuffer me to part from his Court, vntill that time that he had committed his Garriſons in the borders of *Affricke*, vnto my charge. Where I remained a long time chiefe and generall gouernour of all the Cities and Fortreſſes which the King there hath; keeping my reſidence in the Citie of *Centa*, where my miſfortune and aduerſitie toke beginning. There was in the ſame Citie a certaine Knight named Eugerio, who was by the King honoured with the charge and gouernment of the Citie. This Knight had a ſonne called Polydor, moſt valiant and couragious in all extremities; and two daughters called Alcida, and Clenarde, exceeding all the Gentlewomen of their countrey in beautie. Clenarde was endued with ſingular dexteritie in handling her bowe, but Alcida (who was the eldeſt) ſurpaſſed her in beautie. Who hath ſo enamoured my heart, that ſhe hath bene the cauſe of this hopeleſſe and deſperate life which you ſée me leade, and of the cruell death which I call and wiſh for euery houre. Her father was ſo carefull and daintie of her, that he would ſcarce allow her at any time to abſent her ſelfe from his preſence, which hindred me that I could not let her know the affection which I bore her. But neuertheleſſe as often as I ſaw her, I ſignified and bewraied my pain vnto her by meanes of my paſſionate lookes, & the ſighes which proceeded from my heart without the conſent of my will. At length I found occaſion to write vnto her, and therfore vnwilling to neglect ſuch wiſhed opportunitie, I ſent her a Letter, the contents whereof were ſuch.

Marcelio vnto Alcida.

MAdame, your honeſtie and graue countenance, your modeſtie and wiſedom, your wit and great iudgement, and thouſand other vertues with which you are moſt happily endued, beſides the incomparable beautie which increaſeth your

renowne in all partes of the worlde, haue so intangled my thoughts in the consideration thereof, that I haue bene forced to collocate and place the summe of my felicitie in meditating the rare gifts both of bodie and minde, by which it hath pleased the Gods to make your Ladiship famous. But when I consider mine owne vnworthinesse, and perpend the great difference, which is betweene such excellency and my self, such is the dispaire which possesseth my heart, that I suffer incredible torment. Yet the force of your beautie constraineth me to iudge my selfe happie, in that I suffer paine for so worthie a Ladie as your selfe. So that I feele singular ioy and gladnesse in my euil, and receiue an extreame glory in enduring griefe. Paine vnto me is a pastime; to weepe, a pleasure; to sigh, a solace; griefe, health; which doth not raise the fury of torment in me, though therein I enioy a blessed content. All this do I suffer for you Madame; it is your beautie and vertue which causeth me to be tormented with such contrary passions. And therfore pitie an vnfortunate louer, who offereth you his own life, and who desireth not that his euill may be redressed, but only wisheth that it may be knowne.

This was the Letter which I wrote vnto my Ladie, which if it had bene so wel penned as it was fortunate, I wold be loth to change my abilitie with the cloyment style of Tully. The Letter being secretly conueyed into the hands of Alcida, at the first caused her to be offended with my boldnesse, but at last marking the sinceritie of my loue, and the cõstancy wherwith I not only remained stedfast, but also patiently & chærefully endured her crosse answeres and disdainfull lookes, her heart was altered, and she moued to reward my loue with a pleasant countenance. So that when my lucke was to see her, I easily espied the alteration of her former frowardnesse. For her verie eyes did warne me to be of good cheare, and I might plainly see grace seated in her forehead. After which time I began openly to shew me to be her superiour, oftentime iusting, turneying, and writing verses, poemes, and many such other

things

ongs for her seruice, remaining in this paine the space of certaine yeares. Which being expired, Eugerio thought me worthie to be his sonne in law, and by meanes of some of the chiefest personages of the Citie, he offered me his daughter Alcida in marriage. And it was amongst vs agréed, that our wedding should be kept in the Citie of *Lisbone*, to the end that the King of *Portugal* might be present at the same. Whereupon we presently dispatched a Poste in all hast to aduertise the King of this marriage, and to entreate his Maiestie that we commending our charge vnto faithfull and trustie persons, might come thither to celebrate our marriage there. The rumor of which marriage was incontinently spread through all the Citie and the neighbour places thereof, and caused such a generall ioy and applause in all men, as so beautifull a Lady as Alcida, and so faithfull a louer as my selfe deserued. Untill that time it seemeth that I was verie happie. But Fortune that fauoured me so highly, afterward cast me downe headlong into the depth of these miseries, in which I finde my selfe presently. Know therefore, that after my vnfortunate marriage was concluded, and the Kings license granted. Eugerio being a widower, his son Polydor, his daughters Alcida & Clenarde, and vnhappie Marcelie, who vnfoldeth his mishap vnto you, hauing committed our charge to loyall persons, we embarked at the Hauen of *Centa*, to saile to the noble citie of *Lisbone*, there to celebrate our marriage, as I haue before said. The content and pleasure which we conceiued of our wished desires, in such maner blinded vs, that regarding neither the vnmercifull waues, nor the boysterous windes, and commending our vessell to Fortune, the patronesse of inconstancie, we went to sea in the worst and daungerouss season of the yeare, not considering or perpending the inconueniences that at such times are ordinary. But very shortly thereafter, Fortune chastised our temeritie and fond rashnesse: For before night had couered Neptunes face with the curtaine of darkenesse, the Maister of the ship discouered certaine tokens of tempests to come. Soone after began the thicke and obscure cloudes to co-

uer the skies, the angry waues began to murmour, the winds to blow variably. Whereupon the maister of the ship with a fearefull and troubled countenance vttered these words. Ah sorowfull and fearfull tokens! Ah infortunate barke! What ill lucke and miserable aduenture is prepared for thee if the Gods here shew not their deitie. He had no sooner ended these words, but a certaine boysterous and furious blast so launced on the mainsaile, and in such maner whorled into the bodie of the whole ship, that at that instant she was in such daunger, that he who held the sterne was forced to abandon the gouernment therof, and so the ship following the mightie fury wherwith she was ledde, went whither the winde and waues did driue her. The tempest encreased more & more, and became greater and greater; the furious waues couered with white some began to augment their anger & to rage more then before. There might we see a mastie raine fall from the element, entermingled with lightening and fearefull thunder. There might we heare a terrible noyse and shaking of the saile yard, the mast, the lynes, cables, cordes, and tackling of the shippe. There might we also heare the lamentable voyce both of the passengers and Mariners, which caused vs to feare exceedingly. The windes besought the ship on all sides, and the waues battered it in such maner, that the very strongest & best nailed parts thereof burst in peeces. The proud sea sometimes lifted vs vp to the firmament, and suddenly she carried vs downe euen vnto the bottome; yea and (that which was wonderfull) the waues sometimes in such maner parted asunder, that we might plainly see the sand and grauell in the bottome of the sea. The men & women that were in the ship lamenting and bewailing their infortunate end, some fetched heauy and grieuous sighes from the bottome of their hearts; some offered pitifull vowes, others yelded fountaines of teares out of their eies. The maister of the ship not knowing what to do against such raging Fortune, his cunning being ouercome by the fiercenesse and perseuerance of the tempest, could no longer *conduire le timon*.

He

He knew not the nature nor offpring of the windes, and in one inſtant commaunded and ordeined a thouſand different matters. The Marriners troubled and vexed by reaſon of the agony and perplexitie of their preſent death, could not execute their charge, and by reaſon of the noyſe and cries of the paſſengers, could not vnderſtand what the maiſter preſcribed them, calling as loud as he could for his life. Some of them turned the ſaile yard; others haled the ſaile corde; others ſtriked the top ſaile; others ranne to mend the ſprit ſaile; others to ſaue the miſen ſaile; others did take of the bonnet and enlargement of the mainſaile; others were occupied with knitting the broken lines togither; others looked to the hinder deck taile and caſtle of the ſhip; others to the fore decke; others to the hatches; others boyded the ſea into the ſea, caſting the water out of the ſhip. To be ſhort, euery man did what in him laie to defend & ſaue the miſerable veſſell from ineuitable ſhipwrack. But all their diligence ſerued to no end, their vows and tears helped not to appeaſe angry and fierce Neptune; but the night approached more and more, and the wind and tempeſt encreaſed maruellouſly. When the darke night was fallen, the tempeſt being nothing aſſwaged, Eugerio hoping for no remedie, with a troubled countenance repreſenting the very picture of feare and diſpaire, his eyes being caſt on his ſonne, his daughters and me his ſon in law, gaue vs ſufficiently to vnderſtand by the heauineſſe of his lookes, what griefe he ſuffered for the death which was prepared for vs. In ſo much that his care and griefe did as much hurt, as our owne miſfortune. The poore old man enuironed with ſorow, ſpake in this order with a lamentable voyce, the teares running downe his face.

Ah changeable Fortune, enemy of humane welfare, haſt thou reſerued ſuch a wofull deſtruc for my old dayes? Oh how happie are they that die in bloudie battailes amidſt their enemies in their youth, to the ende that neuer attaining to their latter age, they fall not into danger to bewaile their pitifull aduenture and death of their louing children! Oh wonderfull miſhap! oh ſorowfull ſucceſſe! Who euer ended his

life with such griefe as my selfe? For whereas I thought to comfort my selfe at the time of my death, in leauing children in the world to conserue and keepe the memorie and remembrance of my linage and kindred, now I am constrained necessarily to dye with those that ought to celebrate my funerals. O louing and deare children, who would haue thought that my life and yours should haue finished at one selfesame time and instant? Who would haue thought that our liues should haue taken their ende through one selfesame misfortune? I would willingly comfort you my deare children; but what solace can a sorrowfull father giue, whose heart is pestered with so much griefe, and who him selfe is voyde of all consolation.

Comfort your selues my children, arme your hearts with patience, leaue all griefe and sorrow vnto me, to the ende that I dying, may suffer as many deathes as ye all must endure.

This, olde Eugerio vttered with so many sighes and sobs, that he could scarce with much ado speake, embracing vs all one after another, to take his leaue and bid vs farewell, before the houre of imminent shipwracke was come. It would be a great enterprise and difficult matter for me, presently to recount what teares Alcida wept, and what griefe I suffered for her sake, and therefore I will only tell you one thing, that nothing so much grieued me, as that my life (which I had offered for her seruice) could not take ende without her death. In the meane time our forlorne shippe driuen with the force of the angry waues and furious windes (which blewe maruellous strongly) flying all night through the straight of *Gilbatar*, more swiftly then we wished or serued our turne, the next day went astray, I know not how many leagues into the large Mediterranean sea.

Where, after that we had long wandred hither and thither, the force of the winde and waues driuing vs vp and downe for the space of that day and night, the nexte morning the tempest seemed to be something asswaged, and the rufull

waues

waues abasing their courage, Neptune sprædde a pleasant calme ouer the sea; wherewith we were not a little chéered.

But Fortune not content to haue heaped such a world of calamities vppon vs, would also take her pleasure in mocking vs in the midst of miseries. For on the sudbaine the wished calme was turned into a worse and greater extreame tempest then before: which brought vs into such extremitie, that we hoped not for one houre of life. At last one side of the shippe béeing strøken with a great raging whirlewinde, the other side laie flat vppon the water and was in daunger to perish and sincke presently. When I salue the manifest daunger, I begaune to vngirt my sword, to the end it might not hinder mée, and imbracing Alcida, I leapte with her into the shippe boate. Clenarde being a light and nimble Gentlewoman following vs did the same, not leauing behinde her her bowe and her arrowe, for that she estæmed more of that then of some great and precious treasure. Polydor thrusting his father forwardes thought to to haue done as much, and to haue leapt into the boate as we had done, but the Shippe maister with another Marriner, leapt in before them: And as Polydor with his aged father thought to haue followed, the boate was separated from the shippe, by reason of a mightie waue which was driuen by the winde betwixt the shippe and the boate, so that they were forced to remaine in the shippe: the sight whereof in short time were lost, and neuer since heare any newes of her.

But I am of opinion that all doubt remoued, she was swallowed vp by Neptunes greedie waues, or that crossing ouerthwart the sea, shée perished miserably in the coast of *Spayne*. Alcida, Cleonarde, and I, being in the boate, conducted by the industrie and diligent painfulnesse of the Marriners, wée went a straye vp and downe the Seas, for the space of one whole daye and night, attending for Death from

houre

houre to houre, without hope of any remedie; not knowing where or in what part of the world we were. This notwithstanding, the morning next following, we perceiued that we were very néere to land, endeuouring to row as néere it as we could possibly. At the length, the two Marriners being very cunning in swimming, did not only leape into the water to swimme to the shore, but also drew vs all to that so long desired land. After that we were so happily deliuered from the danger which furious Neptune threatened vs, the Marriners fastened their ship-boate to the shore side, & knowing the place where we landed, told vs that we were in the Ile of Formentera: and wonderfully maruelled that we had runne so many myles in so litle time. But they had such experience of the wonders which fierce tempestes are accustomed to doe, that they were not too much amazed at the course of our nauigation. Yet howsoeuer the tempest had driuen vs, we were then assured and out of danger of the menaces wherwith Fortune feared vs amidst the inexecrable waues. But we wer so grieued for the losse of Eugerio and Polydor, so troubled with wearinesse, and so famished with hunger, that we had none or litle cause to reioyce of the life which we had recouered. Neither wil I now rehearse what teares Alcida and Cleonarde shedde because they had lost their father and brother, to the end that I may tell you the sorrowfull and vnhappie successe which I had in that desart and solitary Ile. For after that, by reason we were arriued in the same, I was deliuered from the fury of the sea, loue became such an aduersary and enemy vnto me, that he seemed to be greeued that my life was saued from the perill of the tempest, and that he wold torment me with a new and more grieuous paine, when I thought my selfe to be in safetie. For malicious Cupid wounded the hart of the Pylot (who was called Bartophomus) and rendred him so farre in loue of the beautie of Cleonarde, the sister to Alcida, that to attaine to the point of his intended desires, he forgat the law of friendship and fidelitie, and imagined a straunge and wicked treason, which he did put in execution. Which was such.

As

As the two ſiſters wept and grœuouſly lamented their fathers and brothers miſerable death, it happened that Alcida ouercome with heauineſſe and wearineſſe, ſhe laie downe on the ſand, and fell a ſlœpe. Whereupon I began to ſay to the Pylot: Friend Bartophamus, if we take not ſome order to prouide for victuals, and if our ill lucke be ſuch that we can finde none, we may make account that we haue not ſaued our liues, but rather that we haue changed the manner and kinde of our death: and therefore would I gladly, that you and your companion ſhould goe to the village or borow of this life, which you may finde to fetch meate for vs to eate. Sir Marcelio, (anſwered Bartophamus) Fortune hath done vs pleaſure inough in bringing vs hither, and helping vs to arriue at this Ile, though it be deſart and barren. And you need not to thinke that we ſhall here finde any meat to aſſwage our hunger, and remedie our neceſſitie: for the country is not inhabited. But I will tell you how we may find meanes to ſuffer no hunger: Do you ſee yonder litle Ile that lieth right ouer againſt vs? In that Ile there is great quantitie of deare, connies, hares, and many other beaſtes. There is alſo an Hermitage where the Hermite ordinarily hath good ſtore of bread and meale. Therfore I am of this aduice, that it were good that Clenarde (whoſe dexteritie and cunning in ſhooting is not vnknowne vnto you) ſhould paſſe ouer to that Ile, and carrying her bow and arrowes which he hath here with her, kill ſome Hart or Doe. I and my companion will row her thither, and you, Sir Marcelio, ſhall ſtaie with Alcida. For it may ſo come to paſſe, that before ſhe awaketh, we ſhall returne hither with abundance of freſh and ſauourie prouiſion. This counſaile of the Pilot was well liked of me and Clenarde, we not thinking of his pretended treaſon. Neuertheleſſe, Clenarde would not in any caſe paſſe ouer to the ſaid Ile, vnleſſe I went with her; for ſhe durſt not truſt the Marriners. And although I excuſed my ſelfe not to go with her, ſaying that it was not conuenient for me to leaue Alcida alone, and that ſlœping in a place ſo ſolitary; ſhe anſwered, that the diſtance betweene that place

and the litle Ile, was not verie great, that ſhe was ſure that we ſhould bring good prouiſion with vs for that there was much veniſon in the Ile, and that the ſea was calme and ſtill, (for after that we were ſet on ſhore, the ſurging waues were appeaſed) by reaſon whereof, ſhe concluded, that we might paſſe ouer to the Ile, and returne againe before Alcida awaked, eſpecially becauſe ſhe was tired with wearineſſe, and had many nights bene depriued of her reſt. Finally, ſhe alleaged ſo many reaſons, that forgetting what was moſt conuenient for me to do, I reſolued to accompany her to the Ile. Whereof Bartophanus was not a litle grieued, for that he ſought not to haue but Clenarde only to go, to the end that he might the better execute his vilainous treaſon, yet wanted not the villaine meanes to bring his wicked will to paſſe: for we leauing Alcida a ſléep alone, and being all ſetled in the boat to paſſe to the Ile, I thinking of no hurt, and being vnarmed (for I left al my weapons in the ſhip when I leaped into the boate with Alcida to ſaue our liues) the two Marriners fell vppon me, toke me, and bound me.

Clenarde, ſéeing their manifeſt treaſon, would for griefe caſt her ſelfe ouer bord into the ſea, but the pilot held her, and taking her aſide, ſecretly ſaid vnto her in this maner. Ladie, trouble not your ſelfe for this fact, and be not grieued at that which you ſée vs do; for whatſoeuer we do, we do it in your behalfe. You ſhall vnderſtand, that this Marcelio aſſoone as we were arriued in yonder deſart Ile, ſpake ſecretly vnto me, and deſired me to counſell you to paſſe ouer vnto this Ile hard by, and after that we were on the ſea, that I ſhould ſaile Eaſtward, declaring that he was in loue with you, and that he would leaue your ſiſter in the Ile, to the end that he might haue you at his pleaſure, without any let or hinderance. And whereas he made ſuch difficultie, and ſéemed ſo vnwilling to accompany you, he did but diſſemble to cloak his malice. But I beholding the worthineſſe of your paſſing beautie, not to preiudice your deſerts, at the verie houre that I ſhould haue executed the treaſon, I reſolued to remaine loyall and faithfull

full vnto you, and thereupon haue serued Marcelio as you see, with full deliberation to leaue him at the ende of an Ile not farre hence, on the shoare side, and thence to returne with you incontinently to the place where we left your sister sleeping. Now you know how the matter standeth, and therefore see what you will do.

Clenarde, hearing this, in good soth beléeued that it was all true, and was mortally angry with me, being very well content that Bartofanus should carry me to that place where he had appointed to leaue me. Besides, she beheld me with a disdainfull countenance, that I could not inough maruell at the straungenesse of her alteration. And she was so enraged that she could not speake, but she reioyced in her heart that she should so be reuenged of me; without perceiuing the knauery which the Pylot went about. So that I well marked that Clenarde was nothing grieued at my euill entreatment, whereas notwithstanding at the first, she toke it so heauily: and therefore I said vnto her, How now my sister, what meane you by this? Do you thinke both my misfortune and yours, and the daunger wherein the Gods haue placed vs both at this instant, to be so small and of so little waight, that you ought so sone to cease from weeping? Or doe you hope to see vs sone deliuered out of these traitours hands, that we may be reuenged of their villany. Whereuppon she enflamed with furie like a fierce Lyoneſſe, tolde me that I was so dealt withall, because I would haue leaued her sister Alcida in the solitary Ile to leade her away, and many other such braue inuented lyes, which the Pylot had made her to beléeue.

When I vnderstood that, I felt suche an extreame payne, and was so greéued, that I well perceiued that neuer the like had befallen mée before; and although I could not stirre nor touch those Peasants, yet I miscalled ther and rayled at them wonderfully.

And as touching Clenarde, I alleaged her such quick and sible reasons, that at length she knew that all this pro-

out of the loue which the Pilot Bartofamus boze her. So that ſhe began ſo pitifully to lament our caſe, that it was ſufficient to mollifie ſtones, but not the hard hearts of thoſe traiterous Marriners. Now conſider, that our boate had in ſhozt time with maruellous ſwiftneſſe ouerran a great part of the ſea, when as vnfoztunate Alcida awaked and found her ſelf alone, who ſéeing that ſhe was ſo abandoned and fozſaken, turned her eyes toward the ſea ſide, to ſée if ſhe could eſpie the boate, and perceiuing that it was not there, ſhe went along the ſhoze to ſéeke vs, but ſhe found no bodie. Ye may well thinke (beauſull ſhepheards) what griefe Alcida ſuffered at that inſtant, and imagine what abundance of teares ſhe ſent from her chriſtall eyes. Conſider I pray you, in what extremitie the miſerable yong Lady found her ſelf, when as ſhe was left al alone in that ſolitary and deſart Ile: perpend in like maner how often ſhe ment to precipitate and caſt her ſelfe headlong into the ſea, moleſting the aire with her lamenting voyce, and how often ſhe called me and fozced Eccho to repeat my name in the element. But we were by this time ſo farre ſeparated from her, that we could not vnderſtand her cries, but we might wel perceiue that ſhe with a white handkercheffe (which ſhe lifted in the aire) made ſigne that we ſhould returne: but the traitour Bartofamus could not be entreated. But ſailing maruellous ſwiftly with winde and tyde, we arriued at the Ile Iuique, where he landed, and with his companion carried me on the ſhoze, tying me to an Anker that ſtucke in the ground. Incontinently certaine Marriners came thither being of Bartofamus acquaintance and of like diſpoſitiõ. And notwithſtanding that Clenarde recommẽded her honoz vnto them, & praied them to deliuer her from Bartofamus his wicked enterpziſe, yet ſhe obteined nothing the mozе of them peaſants, who toke no regard of her iuſt complaint, but gaue the traitour ſufficient pzouiſion to liue, wherewith he entered his boate againe, taking Clenarde with him fozcelye againſt her will. After which time I haue not ſéene her, noz heard any newes of

I remaiñed there a loug time famiſhed and bound hand

and

and sote. But the chiefest point of my griefe consisted in the calamitie and miserable case which poore Alcida was in, being left alone in the Ile of Formentera. For as conceruing the necessitie wherein I was, that was soone redressed. For certaine Marriners that were more pitifull and honester men then the other villaines, hearing me call vnto them, came neare me, and freed me from my wonderfull kind of prison, vnlosing the lines wherwith I was tyed to the Anchor. And after that they had giuen me meate to asswage the fury of hunger (which wel neare had ouercome me and caused me to resigne my life) I was so earnest with them, and so importunately requested them to carry me to the Ile of Formentera, that they being moued with pitie, presently rigged a Brigantine, & making prouision of victuals and weapons, sailed with me to the Ile of Formentéra, where I had left Alcida. But what search I made, I could not finde her. Suppose gentle shepheards, that she had chosen the sea to be the sepulchre wherein she buried her grieued bodie, or that the wilde and sauage beastes had made a praie of her tender limmes. But I searching along the shore, plaines, rockes, vallies, caues, dennes, and most secret corners, and burroughs of all the Ile, at length found a peece of a rocke wherein certaine letters were engraued with the point of a knife, which conteined this protestation; which I as deeply engraued in my heart with the edge of my memory, as it was cut in the hard rocke with the point of a knife.

Thou sandie medow, desart all and drie,
Thou sable, like the plumes of snow-white swans,
Thou sea that shrowdest *Neptune* in his court,
And art acquainted with my flowing teares,
Thou furious winde and variable aire,
Molested with my grieuous plaints;
Where painted and engrauen doth remaine,
Th'exceeding torment of my helplesse griefe;
All ye make true report of my intent.
For seeing that mine owne *Marcelio*

Is with *Clenarde* fled, I left alone,
And ſithens his faith and all my hope withall,
Is with his ſailes committed to the winde;
Beare witneſſe that *Alcida* thus forſaken,
Hencefoorth will neuer fancy perſon more;
For feare to enter in ſuch dangerous ſeas,
And eke to fall from freedome to like foyle,
From pleaſing reſt to ſuch diſquiet toyle.

I will not here make mention of the wounde which I felt in my heart, when I redde this memoriall, by which I knewe that by Foꝛtunes curſed ſpight, I was hated of my Ladie and miſtreſſe; whome I loue dearer then mine owne life. Wherefoꝛe being enuironed with ſo many calamities and troubles, I as weary to liue any longer, would haue pierced my diſtreſſed heart, intending to runne on the poynt of my ſwoꝛde, had not thoſe good Marriners that were with me, not only by perſwaſions and woꝛds, but in effect and déedes alſo hindꝛed my intent. They foꝛced mée halfe dead to returne to the Brigantine, and by my impoꝛtunate intreatie they ſayled towards the coaſts of *Italy*, and landed at the hauen of *Cayette*, in the kingdome of *Naples*: where I enquired foꝛ Alcida, aſking newes of all thoſe that I found; and at length méeting with certaine ſhepheards, after I had tolde them certaine tokens of her, then knowing whome I ment, enfoꝛmed me that ſhe certainly landed at the ſame hauen in a Spaniſh ſhippe, which paſſing by the Ile of *Formentera*, and them Riuers, finding her there all alone, fetched her aboard. And that becauſe I ſhould not finde her, ſhe had changed her apparel and clothed her ſelfe like a ſhepheard. Wherupon I incontinently alſo became a ſhepheard to the eye, in outward colours, hoping the ſoner to finde her; and in this habit ranne ouer the whole country, without méeting with any man that might tell me newes of her. At length I found a certain ſhepheard that gaue me intelligence that ſhe knowing that I was enfoꝛmed of her being there, toke ſhippe and

ſailed

sailed into *Spaine*. So that with all spéd I toke ship also, minding to follow her, and I arriued here in *Spaine*: which I haue almost coursed ouer, and as yet cannot heare any tydings of this cruell Ladie which I séeke with such labour and exceeding paine.

And this (gentle shepheards) is the Tragedie of my life, this the cause of my death, and this the successe of my mishap. If perchance I haue troubled you with the tediousnesse and perplexitie of this pittifull history, the faulte is in your selues, who haue so earnestly desired me to do the same. In the meane while, I beséech you not to take your pleasure in going about to remedie my euill, nor to comfort my distressed soule. But let me spout out of my infortunate eyes so many teares, as so iust an occasion requireth. Wherewith Marcelio hauing ended the discourse of all his misfortune, he began to sigh and to wéepe so bitterly, that it was pittifull to behold; in such maner, that no man that saw him could not but be moued with exceeding pitie.

Euphilia, hauing heard this pittifull and lamentable discourse of Marcelio, was sorely grieued for his cause, and gaue him this comfortable answer. Sir Marcelio, the strangenesse of your mishap is sufficient to abash any man whatsoeuer, and to giue him sufficient cause to be grieued though it concerne not himselfe; But séeing there is no harme so great but may be helped in tract of time, and as Fortune is inconstant in her fauours, so is she likewise not constant in her frownes; and she hoiseth mē as wel from aduersitie to prosperitie, as she casteth them from their wished pleasures to an intollerable griefe. Insomuch that her onely essence is inconstancie, and all her being is being variable, as well in withdrawing her fauours, as in bestowing them. And therefore (valiant Knight) be of good cheare, draw vp your spirits, and couragiously take hold on the shield of hope. For I doubt not but that you shal in short space attain to your wished desires, and find your Lady whom you say to be in these parts of *Spaine*. For if it be so (as I certainly beleeue it is) all doubt removed, I shall heare of her,

by

by reaſon that all the ſhepheards of the country reſort hither; ſo that it cannot be but we ſhall heare of them ſuch newes as they know, & it may ſo fall out, that Alcida her ſelfe may haue occaſion to paſſe this way. But howſoeuer know this, that ſhe cannot be long in the country but we ſhall heare of her. And beſides, wee will giue order that ſhee ſhall be ſought for in the moſt ſecret places of the whole country. But in ſuch manner that your arriuall into theſe parts be kept ſecret, leaſt ſhe flie into ſome other country farther of. Marcelio thanked her greatly for her excéeding and vndeſerued curteſie, and deſired her to remember to do as ſhe ſo freely and of her owne voluntary goodneſſe had promiſed. Whereupon taking his leaue of her, Perina, and Perierio, notwithſtanding that they were loth to let him depart ere morning, yet he ſo earneſtly deſired them to take his moſt iuſt excuſe in good part, and to ſuffer him to do according to his owne intent, that they could not but let him accompliſh his pleaſure. So that Marcelio thanking them all in moſt curtuous maner, for their rare hoſpitalitie and ſingular beneuolence towards him, departed late in the night from thoſe famous ſhepheards, and toke his wonted courſe in running vp and downe the woods, rockes, plaines, caues, and all ſuch ſolitary & deſart places where he thought he might méete with the cauſe of his griefe, and yet the ſole miſtreſſe of his heart, and only obiect of his content and delight. The noble ſhepheards were maruellouſly ſorrowfull for his departure: but eſpecially Perierio, who (as you haue heard) was in loue with the Ladie that fled from him in the wood. For he had purpoſed to aſke Marcelio certaine tokens of his Alcida, becauſe he doubted whether that Ladie which he had ſéene, had bene Alcida; but for that Marcelio had declared that his Ladie was apparelled in the habit of a ſhepheard, he gathered that it was not Alcida, becauſe the Ladie which he ſaw was moſt ſumptuouſly and gorgiouſly attired, more like ſome Princeſſe then a counterfeyt ſhepheard. Wherof he was glad, for two reſpects; the one becauſe Marcelio rehearſed Alcida her proteſtation, engrauen in the rocke. Whereby ſhe ſignified that ſhe would

neuer

neuer loue any man liuing more. The other, because Marcelio was Alcidas husband in troth and promise; and therefore thought he should haue but hard lucke to become competitor and corriuall to so worthie a Knight and faithfull louer as Marcelio. Euphilia and Perina went to their rest, but Perierios minde was so intangled in the conceipt which he had of his strange loue, that he could not rest, but tumbling and tolling vp and downe in his bedde, by that the day appeared, he went from bedde as he came vnto it, for he had not so much as shut his eyes all the time that he laie. Assone as he had put on his cloathes, he went into the Orcheard to driue away his melancholy passions; but the more he striued against loue, the lesse he preuailed, and the meanes wherewith he sought to quench the fire which Cupid had enflamed in his breast, did kindle the same. For hearing the birds sing their naturall notes, and fill the ayre with their chirping noyse, he began in this maner to renue his passions.

Ah pleasant birds that bewray your wished content by your shrill voyce which soundeth so sweetly in the aire, were I so happie that I might haue cause to sing with you. Ah cruell Fortune that didst send me in the woods to meet with my enemy. Ah vnmercifull Cupid, that goest about to slaie me, by her, for whose seruice I would willingly offer my life! Why hast thou made me loue her that hateth me? And why prolongest thou my life to encrease my torment? If I may not enioy her in whom my felicitie consisteth, I must die. And therfore if I must be depriued of my wished desires, sweete death mend thy pace, and deliuer me out of this intollerable griefe. Make haste ye fatall dames, and cut the lyne of my life, that with the losse of the same, I may gaine pleasing rest and quietnesse. But why do I request, where I may command? Haue not I this dagger which at my pleasure may cause the dreadfull Destinies to throw my miserable bodie (the verie habitakle of griefe) breathlesse on this ground? True, but what if with one stroake, I make foure wounds in foure seuerall bodies. For if I die, aged Camillo cannot liue, nor yet either

Euphilia or Perina. Therefore rather then my father or my ſiſters ſhould end my Tragedie, I will endure the extræmeſt torment that Loue or Fortune can inuent.

Why then come woe,
and be my daily weed;
Come, come, and wend
with me in euery place,
Come be the drinke
and meate whereon I feed:
And paint thy colours
In my youthfull face.
Let Fortune frowne,
Let wanton *Venus* hate:
Let *Cupid* fret,
woe, is my truſtie mate.

And therwith Perierio flung out of the Orchard, and went with his ſheepe to the field. And after Euphilia and Perina being warmed by Phœbus ſiluer lines, that Aurora had cleared the aire, and expelled the darkeneſſe of the night, followed with their flockes alſo. But Perierio leaſt they ſhould perceiue his inward griefe by his outward lookes, led his ſheepe ſomething farre out of the way, where he thought he might be out of ſight, vntill he had powred forth the teares which as yet ſatte in his eyes. Dinner time being come, he waſhed the teares from his face, and looked as chéerfully as he could, leaſt his father or his ſiſters ſhould marke any alteration in him. He liued thus for the ſpace of two monethes, weeping and lamenting the abſence of the Ladie which he loued, oftentimes raunging through all the neighbour woods, to ſée if hée might bee ſo fortunate as to méete with her againe.

Euphilia and Perina, how cunningly ſoeuer Perierio cloaked his

his griefe vnder a pleasant countenance, yet because he so delighted to be alone, haunting solitarie places, beganne to suspect that Perierio had something or other that troubled him.

And they could not inough maruell why he so often separated himselfe from their companie, whereas notwithstanding hee was wont so pleasantly to recreate them, either rehearsing some historie, or sounding his instrument, or discoursing of the disposition of the water, inclination of the Plannettes, and of the ecclesiasticall orbes. And therefore they could not imagine what might be the cause that he was of merrie, become melancholie, and to delight in solitarinesse, where he so coueted companie. And to the ende that they might know what moued him to alter and chaunge his naturall complexion, vpon a certain morning when the aire was something darkened with a grosse myst, they followed him secretly into the woods: and although he almost tired them with trotting vp and downe all the pathes and crosse wayes of the wood, yet they maruelling at the strangenesse of his walke, rested not vntill the bright beames of the Sunne had chased away the duskish myst: for then they were compelled to staie behinde Perierio a prettie way, least they should be séene by him.

At length, he being ouercome with wearinesse, the sooner because hée laboured in vaine: griefe and trauell togither forced him to rest. He therefore espying a taule Pyne, which did cast a large and entycing shadow, threw him selfe downe on the hard ground vnder the same, and taking his countrie Cytheren, sung so swéetely vnto it, that the heauenly harmonie of his musicke amazed all the Deere and Birds in the wood.

Euphilia and Perina had no sooner marked that their brother had taken the aduantage of the Pyne, to shroude his wearie bodie from the iniury of Apollos heate, but they entering in the midst of the thickets, to draw as neare him as they might heare the sound of his instrument rebound against the bushes,

whereof they were paſſing glad, hoping that he would bewray his thoughts to the dumbe træs and ſenſeleſſe bushes. They therefore liſtning, heard him ſing in this maner.

Floribus vt plenum ver, ſic mea vita periclis,
Piſcibus vt q̃ fretum, ſic ego mille malis:
Aduerſis cumulor, cumulat? vt hortus arenis;
Gaudia me fugiunt, ſorte petitqúe dolor.

My minde is voyd of mirth, no ioy
my humor doth poſſeſſe:
No paſtimes auailes, nor ſport
my griefe for to redreſſe.
No Muſe may moue, no ſong delight,
no, no, nor pleaſure pleaſe;
No tune can touch, no fancy like,
no toy can worke my eaſe.
No game, no plaie, no dance, no ſhew,
no company at all;
No exerciſe, no vſe of bow,
nor yet of boule or ball.
Ne *Bacchus* cuppes, ne *Ceres* cheare,
ne *Venus* lookes vnſure:
From wo to wantonneſſe, can now,
my penſiue thoughts allure.
Care, care, doth waſte my yeares though yoong,
and vexe my youthfull age:
And therefore ſince no worldly thing
my dolour can aſſwage.
I am content becauſe compeld,
where others laugh to weepe:
At night, a thouſand thoughts reuolue,
where others take their ſleepe.

After he had ended this Sonnet, Perina his yongeſt ſiſter, ſéeing that he roſe to depart thence, whiſtled and ſo ſtaied him.

For

For he marueled who it ſhould be, but at length eſpied both his ſiſters comming towards him, which wonderfully aſtoniſhed him, becauſe they had neuer done the like before: and curtuouſly gréeting them, aſked what the cauſe was of their comming thither, Euphilia anſwered, your ſelfe brother Perierio. For though we haue great regard of our owne welfare (quoth Perina) yet we do not regard our ſelues only, but are as carefull of your fortune as of our owne. And therefore we (quoth Euphilia) marking and perceiuing by your ſolitarie walkes, that you were troubled with ſome griefe or other, and that ſome miſfortune had happened vnto you, we were as ſorie as if it had bene our own caſe. This brother Perierio, is the cauſe of our comming, to ſée if we might come in knowledge of the euill which fortmenteth your youth, that it being knowne vnto vs, might by our diligence and induſtrie, be remedied and amended. Therefore brother, conceale it not from vs whatſoeuer it be, and you ſhall finde in vs more then ſiſterlike readineſſe, if more may be. Ah louing ſiſters (quoth Perierio) I cannot inough thanke you, both for the loue you beare me, and in truth the onely cauſe that I haue ſmothered my paine with ſilence, not reuealing it vnto any of you, hath béen, for that I was loth that you ſhould be grieued for my ſake, and I wiſhed nothing ſo much, as that all the diſcontent and anguiſh of my euil ſhould redound to no bodies griefe but mine owne. And therefore (ſweéte ſiſters) if you loue your ſelues and me alſo, wiſh not to be acquainted with my ſore, leaſt you ſuffer part of the paine. But content your ſelues and looke to the tranquilitie of your owne hearts, not tormenting your ſelues in my behalfe. But you be deceiued herein brother Perierio (quoth Euphilia.) For in thinking to free vs from griefe by concealing your euil, you do amiſſe. Know you not that they which are carefull of any mans welfare, and ſo tenderly loue him, that they thinke themſelues hurt if any ill light on him, are continually compaſſed with feare if he be grieued, thinking the cauſe thereof oftentimes to be far greater or worſe then it is?

Quando ego non in tui grauiora pericula veris?

And therefore brother, you inflict our hearts with diuerſe torments in concealing your euill from vs, whereas we can but feele one paine if we knew it. For now, the torment of ſuſpition in ſuſpecting diuerſe things, doth aſſaile vs of one ſide, fearing ſometimes one miſchiefe, ſometimes another; euerie one whereof woundeth our hearts with paſſing ſorrow. And feare maketh the aſſault of the other ſide; cauſing vs to imagine that the matter is far worſe then it is. Laſtly, hope troubleth vs as much as ſuſpition or feare. For though it be a motion of the minde of future lucke or good to come, and not of euill; yet is it but a perturbation of the mind troubling and vexing it continually; and he that hopeth enioyeth not his hearts eaſe nor quietneſſe of minde. Why then ſiſter (quoth Perierio) to ridde you of all ſuſpition, feare and hope, knowe that I loue, and ſuſpect no worſe, nor hope any better; And aſke me no more, for I ſhould not be able to anſwer you if you ſhould be too inquiſitiue. The reaſon is, becauſe I know not whom I loue; nor where ſhe is whom I loue. And is it loue (quoth Perina) that troubleth you? Why then left you not this verſe out of the Sonnet which you ſung to the Cytheren but euen now.

Ne *Bacchus* cuppes, ne *Ceres* cheare,
ne *Venus* lookes vnſure:
From wo to wantonneſſe, can now,
my penſiue thoughts allure.

Well remembred ſiſter Perina; (quoth Euphilia) for if he be in loue, he muſt needs offer ſacrifice to Venus, and what but the vnſure lookes of Venus hath cauſed him to giue ouer all paſtime and myrth, and liue in paſſionate griefe. And yet he ſaith,

That *Venus* lookes vnſure,
could no way him allure.

How then can you loue, Perierio, if you be not allured by beautie? Very well ſiſter (quoth Perierio.) For though Venus

be

be accounted the Goddesse of loue in being mother to Cupid, yet doth she command no farther thē beauty stretcheth: which is not the only obiect that moueth men to loue. What thinke you not, that vertue, nobilitie, excellency or wealth, may moue vs to loue? Then you must confesse that I may loue, and yet not allured by Venus colours. Neuertheless know, that beautie is the onely cause and motiue of my loue, and yet do I not thinke that the verse which my sister Perina so well remembred, was vnfitly inserted among the other verses of my Sonnets. For seeing that I loued, and yet was bereft of all hope euer to enioy her whome I loued (because I neither knewe what she was, nor where she was, as I haue already told you) by reason whereof, I wished no greater pleasure then griefe, nor better companion then woe, and therfore might very well say, that the vnsure lokes of Venus should not prouoke my pensiue thoughts from woe to wantonnesse; meaning not by Venus loks sincere & true loue, but wantō & voluptuous loue.

As Perina thought to reply, she was interpelled by a certaine Knight that came galloping towards the place where she Perierio and Euphilia sate, being sorely wounded in diuers places of his bodie, his sword being drawne, and holding a scarfe of silke almost to peeces in his left hand. This Knight seeing Perierio and his sisters, could not inough maruell that he had found shepheards so surpassing in beautie. And drawing neare them, he was so curteously saluted by them, that he was amazed to haue such an vnlooked for salue. And requiting them with like curtesie, asked them whether they had not seen any men riding that morning through the same wood. Perierio answered no. And as the Knight thought to take his leaue of them, Euphilia desiring to know what he was, found occasion to staie him, and therefore spake vnto him in this manner: Sir Knight, it seemeth that you are sorely wounded, by the abundance of blood which hath issued out of sundrie partes of your bodie, & therfore I think it were not amisse if you should alight from your horse & trie vp your wounds ere you trauel on any farther.

And

And for as much as we are farre from any towne or village, if it will please you to take in good part such homely fare as my fathers country cottage can afford, you shall finde vs readie to lead you thither, and to welcome you to such cheare as may content nature, though it be not comparable to courtly dainties. The Knight being verie weary, and fearing least he might incurre extreame danger, if it should happen to be long ere he might reach to some towne, though he was ashamed, necessitie forcing him thereto, accepted of Euphilias offer; thinking that God had sent him in that wood to meete with these curteous shepheardes, who beyond all expectation proffered him such friendship and succour, he being a meere stranger vnto him. Therefore thanking them for their exceeding curtesie, did beare them company to their fathers house. Where the old man reioycing to see so comely a person by his son Perierio and his two daughters, feasted the Knight in such maner, that he easily might perceiue that he was welcome. After they had ended dinner, Euphilia asked the Knight how he had gotten all those woundes, and what ill fortune had brought him into such danger. Whereupon the Knight began to make this discourse of his Tragedy. Gentle shepheards, to the end that you may know that you haue the miserablest man in the world before your eyes, here present with you, I will as briefly declare you the historie of all my life as I may, so it be not troublesom vnto you. And for that I know it wil both greeue you and molest you, to heare the tragicall euents happened vnto me since my cradle, I am loth to giue you any cause of griefe, and had rather seale my euil with secrecy, then vnfold the same to your grief. But seeing that it pleaseth you to know the cause of this my mishap, I holde my selfe bounden to pleasure you, and do according to your desire. And to be as litle tedious as I possibly may, I will vse as much breuitie as the greatnesse of the matter will permit me. Know therefore (gentle shepheards) that Fortune threatning me bad lucke, began to lower on me before I came into the worlde; for she conspired my death before I was borne. You must note how that my father before

I

I was borne had no childzen, but his brothers sonne was his adopted heire, and should haue inherited all his lands had he died without issue. So that this adopted heire hauing intelligence that my mother was great with childe, very carefully wayted foz the time that she should fall in trauell, which houre being approached, he corrupted the Midwife with a great summe of money, to smother me at my first entrie into this world, and to spoile me of my life, before I perfectly liued. But no, Foztune would reserue me to wozser euents, and I was not so happie as to be dealt withall as my vnkinde cousin had appointed. Foz the Midwife being pricked with remorse of conscience, and ouercome with pittie, could not finde in her heart to stifle me in her hands, when as I was committed to her to be tenderly handled and loked to, with all the care and diligence that might be; but she inuented another manner to content Syluestro, (foz so was my cousin named) which was secretly to steale me from my parents, and to conuey me into a house of a powze labouring man (whose wife was wont to serue foz nurse vnto such powze mens wiues as foz weakenesse oz sickenesse could not bzing vp their owne childzen) about twentie miles from the place where my parentes dwelled, which was the renowmed Citie of *Constantinople*, my father at that time being generall gouernour ouer the same Cittie. The Midwife made the same powze labouring man & his wife beleeue, that I was sonne vnto one of her cousins, that she had in the aboue named Citie, being called Bradasso, and therefoze willed them to take all the care and diligence that might be in fostring me as a childe ought to be, and that she would accozdingly reward them, as she did; foz she paide them duly, weeke by weeke, as long as she liued. Thinking her fault moze excusable, seeing she caused me to be bzought vp with part of the mony which she tooke of my cousin to spoyle me of my life. I omit foz bzeuities sake, what griefe my parents suffered foz the losse of their long desired sonne, especially because they knew not what was become of me, but they thought nothing so sure, as that I was dead and that the Midwife would not

let them know of it, least they should haue bene so suddeinly oppressed with such sorrowfull newes.

When I was three yeares olde or there about, the Midwife died such a suddeine kind of death, that she could not take order with my Nurse for me. The Nurse therefore hauing intelligence of her death, fearing least she should keep me for nothing, (which she was not able to do being a very poore woman) borrowed her neighbours horse, and rode with me to the Citie of *Constantinople*; where at the Midwifes house she enquired for the same Bradasso, whose childe she thought it was. This Bradasso being a yong man of some foure and twentie or fiue and twentie yeares of age and vnmarried, swore by all that he might, that he neuer had to do with woman in his life time, so far as to get her with child, and was content to bring it vp if there were any woman that would auerre it to be his child. Wherof the woman wonderfully amazed, wist not what she should do with me. And so poore Maffeo (for that is my vnfortunate name) was become a bastard that had neither father nor mother that wold know him or receiue him as their child: and yet had both father and mother who would haue thought themselues to be the happiest parentes that liued vnder the daile of heauen, if they had found their owne beloued infant, whom they thought to be dead long since. But my cosin being enformed by the rumor spread through the Cittie, that a childe nurrished three or foure yeares by the industry of such a Midwife, could find neither father nor mother, after the same midwife was dead, began to calculate the time of my birth, & finding it to be full iust at the time that the nurse auouched that I was brought vnto her, remembred that the nurse had told him that she had dispatched the child, & taken such order ꝑ he should neuer be heard off. And therefore he neuer thought any otherwise but that I was dead. But after he had heard this rumor spred through the citie of me, he began to thinke how women are pitiful, & therfore doubted whether the midwife had caused me to be fostred or no in that place, because he should not heare of me; he considered also that my parents had told him diuerse

times,

times, that I was not dead but lost, or rather stolne: though in truth they thought I was dead; & imagined that the midwife had but made them to vnderstand that I was lost, or stolen to diminish their greefe with hope. He considered also that ỹ midwife was no woman to be the mother of the child her self, séeing she had bin widow a long time, and was aboue thrée score and ten yéeres old when she died, which age was not conuenient for wantonnesse. To be short, he concluded that it was I, and fearing least if the nurse should make too diligent search to find out my parents, it might at length come to my fathers eare, & himself by ỹ means depriued of his hereditie; he caused the nurse to come vnto him, & told her, that séeing that no man would father me, he wold haue me brought vp to be his page, séeing that I was a prittie faire complexioned boy. And agréeing with her for my bord, charged her to let me want nothing, and to vse me well. After that time, he came oftentimes to the place where the Nurse dwelt, to see whether I was well handled, and sent me apparrell by his men, and money to discharge my expences for my bord. When I was about ten or eleauen yeares of age, hee toke mee from that place and made me his Page, but in truth vsed me as if I had bene his brother rather then his boye: by reason whereof my father (though I then did not yet knowe that hee was my father) made the more of me: for my cousin dwelled with my father, and was as his son. In the mean time I thought my self most happie, séeing that I had no father, to haue hit vppon so good a maister. Whom I serued as faithfully, as he déerly loued me. After I had serued him the space of thrée or foure yeares, his father by adoption, and my father by right, though Fortune had beguiled Nature, died, & my mother within thrée monthes after his burial. So that my maister being in possession of al my fathers goods, lands & lordships, began to court the chéefest gentlewomen of the citie, thinking himself worthie to be matched with the chéefest. Among all others vnto whom he made loue, he chéefly offered his seruice to ỹ daughter of a Spanish knight that liued in *Constantinople*, called *Don Francesco de Guerdona*,

a man of great valour, wealth and pollicie. So that my maiſter to obtaine the loue of faire Eleonora, (for ſo was the Gentlewoman called) ſued, ſought, watched, warded, prayed, proteſted, and did what ſeruice a man might do in the behalfe of his miſtreſſe; ſomtimes he plaid late in the night before her window on his Lute, Cythren, and Bandora; ſometimes he Turneyd and Juſted in her preſence, to moue her to loue him for his manhood: and ſometimes he ſent her Letters, Songs and Sonnets therein, bewraying his paſſions; hoping ſhe would receiue him to her ſeruant being ouercome with pittie. But all ſerued not: for ſhe could no way be moued to beare him affection; wherat I maruelled greatly, nor could not imagine at the cauſe thereof. For he was a braue valiant yong Gentleman, of great authoritie and eſtimation, fauoured by Fortune, as wealthie, rich and abundant, ornored by nature, being beautifull and faire of complexion, taull and well proportioned, and of a co..gious and reſolute mind, wiſe, politicke, and wittie. All which conſidered, no man could not but condemne the Gentlewoman of crueltie, ſeeing that no man ſo faithfully ſerued her as Sir Sylueſtro, (for ſo was my maiſter called.) But at length I had ſufficient occaſion offered me, not to maruell any longer at her frowardneſſe towardes my maiſter. For Eleonoras minde was more ſetled on the Page that was wont to bring her Letters and papers wherein was his maiſters meſſage, then on him that ſent them. Which ſhe at laſt ſhewed, and bewraied ſo openly, that I began to perceiue what affection ſhe boare me, and how ſhe both deſpighted and deſpiſed my maiſter. For I being ſent vnto her vpon a certain morning, with a paire of ſilken garters from my maiſter, all edged with gold, and enuironed with pearles, moſt ſumptuouſly and artificially wrought, ſhe taking the garters out of my hand, gaue me a Portugall Cruſado, (being worth ſix Engliſh Angels,) for my paines. Whereof I was verie glad, partly becauſe I was ſo wel rewarded, & partly becauſe I thought ſhe beganne to make more account of my maiſter in accepting the preſent, ſo bountifully rewarding the meſſenger. But as

I was departed out of the house to let my maister knowe of that good newes, (hoping thereby to haue augmented my Crusado, with my maisters liberalitie) she called me againe, and leading me into her bed-chamber alone, burst out into these words. Ah Maffeo, thou doest serue thy maister too truskily, to do me pleasure: and thou art an instrument against thine owne welfare. How so Madame, (quoth I:) I will soone shew thée how (quoth she); but first you must tell me whether you thinke not that he hindreth himselfe that sueth to obtain that thing for another, which is wished vnto himselfe. Yea Madam (quoth I). Then (replied she) do you harme your selfe in endeuouring by your carefull, painfull, industrious, and diligent seruice, to satisfie your maisters desire, in that he wisheth her to be his wife, vnto whom thy selfe maist be a wedded husband. And so if thou grant that thou wouldest be glad of such a wife as Eleonora, I conclude, that thou striuest against thy owne commoditie, and that thou art an instrument against thine owne selfe.

When I heard her conclusion, it so well liked me, that I considered not whether the consequence followed according to the premisses, or no. Yet howsoeuer, it was so contriued that it set me at a non plus; In so much that I stood amazed, and knew not what betided me. I had neuer yet folowed the court of Cupid, though I had serued one of his souldiers: and therefore I was to seeke of mine answer, and wist not what to say. Notwithstanding that I felt an amourous passion créeping in my heart, contrary to any motion that euer I had felt before. For I know not how, my thoughts were surprised with loue, after Eleonora had argued in such order with me, and I feared that she had bene but in some merry vaine to iest, taking her pastimes in mocking with me. And therefore I made this answere. Madame, you be verie mery this morning, whatsoeuer the matter is; God grant it be towards your good lucke. And you are the bolder with me, because you may. But least my maister long for my comming, I beseech you to tell me whether it will please you to command me any seruice, for I must

yalke homeward. None other (quoth ſhe) but that thou thanke him for his preſent, and giue him this from me, which is no leſſe worth then his; and ſo I do owe him nothing. Wherewith ſhe reached me a Yatte that was ſent her father from a Spaniſh Duke, being a moſt coſtly Iewell. I therefore taking my leaue, ſhe bid me farewell, adding this clauſe to ſhut vp her Vale. Moleſt me no more for thy maiſter, doe for thy ſelfe what thou wilt Maffeo. To be ſhort, I turned vnto my maiſter with ſuch anſwere as Eleonora commanded me. But I began to be ſo loue ſicke, that I knew not how it was poſſible that a man might be ſo greatly altered, and ſo wonderfully changed in ſo ſhort a time. Within a fewe dayes after, my maiſter had prepared a letter to be ſent to Eleonora, which I put in my pocket, and walked vp and downe the ſtreets not far from the place where ſhe dwelled, & when I thought good, I returned home with ſuch anſwere as my braines could inuent, and ſo I ſerued my maiſter, obeying the commaund of Eleonora. Who was ſo fixed in my heart, that I could not be ſeparated from the thought of her beautie and excellencie one minute of an houre. And though I ſought by all meanes poſſible to extinguiſh the fire that conſumed me, leaſt at length it might growe to an vnquenchable flame; all helped not, I ſtroue againſt the ſtreame; & to go about to rote out the ſparkles of loue, was as hard a matter for me, as it were to any man to plucke the ſtarres out of the chriſtaline orbe wherein they be fixed. Therefore at length, I not able to endure any longer, I wrote Eleonora a Letter to this effect.

Maffeo, to Eleonora.

LAdie, the extreame paine which my ouerburthened heart doth ſuffer', cauſeth mee to let you vnderſtand the greatneſſe therof. I was in libertie, but you haue brought me into bondage, I mean of the mind. I was free from thoſe butchers the affections which torture the hearts of men; but now by you am deliuered into the handes of thoſe cruell vexations

which

which ſo peſter my paſſionate heart, that I am forced to fly vnto your mercy. Pitie therefore your poore *Maffeo*, leaſt he die: who if he hath bin too bold in bewraying his grief and torment vnto you, hopeth himſelfe to be excuſed in that your ſelfe are the cauſe thereof. Farewell Ladie, and think on poore *Maffeo*.

She had no ſoner receiued my Letter, but ſhe ſent me this bitter anſwer, which ſhe did but to try my conſtancy, as afterward it veris well appeared. The contents were ſuch.

Eleonora to baſe Maffeo.

I Perceiue *Maffeo*, that baſe and fondneſſe ſtriue in thy heart for ſuperioritie; of which fooliſh ſtrife I meane not to be an arbitreſſe. Could you finde no fitter perſon then my ſelfe, to part the fraie? Poore ſwad, could thy toong pronounce in my preſence, which thy hart cannot perceiue in mine abſence? And cannot you with deep ſtudie hauing had all this time, attaine to the knowledge of my humor, whereas notwithſtanding extempore, you gaue ſo right a cenſure of my vaine. When *Eleonora* mocketh, thou muſt not imagine that ſhe meaneth: and when ſhe ieaſteth, thou muſt not thinke that ſhe is in earneſt. As for for the loſſe of thy libertie, not I but thy baſe ignorance and dul wit is the cauſe thereof. But grant I were, do alwaies they that impriſon, ſet at libertie? No: many taken by one, and deliuered by another. Leaue thy fondneſſe *Maffeo*, leaſt I haue cauſe to hate thee: for I may not loue thee. I bid thee farewell, for I wiſh thee no euill. And therefore take heed thou offer me no occaſion thereto.

Ye may ſuppoſe (gentle ſhepheards) how coldly that Letter comforted diſtreſſed Maffeo, **when he erpected the ſentence of life or death. But then I perceiued that ſhe had but mocked with me, when ſhe vſed her merry prittle prattle vnto mee in her Chamber at her owne houſe, yet ceaſſed not**

to

ſo burne and frie in the furious flames of my burning paſſions; and ſo remained as long as I could, ſtriuing againſt loue like a valiant champion; and paſſed ouer two moneths in continuall ſkirmiſhes againſt Cupid: but alaſſe who was compelled to yéeld at length, but I that fought againſt a God of ſuch force and puiſſance? In ſo much, that I vowed rather to die, then to liue without the loue of Eleonora, and in all haſte diſpatched another Letter which I ſecretly conueied vnto her, the meaning whereof was much to this purpoſe.

Maffeo, to Eleonora.

LAdie, I am loth to moleſt you, and yet cannot chuſe but trouble you. Loue hath ſo conquered the bulwarke of my heart, that I haue determined to offer my life for your ſeruice: I know that *Eleonora* did mocke, and doth now diſdaine, but I am forced to ſuffer, and am readie to die, becauſe both mocked and diſdained by her in whom my life conſiſteth. And therefore though by Fortune I am baſe (as you vrged) yet by nature I finde the contrary, in that noble *Eleonora* is the ſubiect of my reſtleſſe thoughts. You willed me to take heed leaſt I ſhould giue you occaſion to hate me; If I do, though it greeue me, yet I cannot helpe it. Neuertheleſſe, ſo you giue me leaue to loue you, I ſhall be content, though you hate me. Farewell.

Vnto this Letter ſhe ſent me no anſwere, but it happened within two or thrée daies after that ſhe had redde it, that I had occaſion to paſſe through the ſtréete where ſhe dwelled, ſhe ſéeing me, and ſitting in the dowre alone, called me vnto her, and brake forth into theſe bitter words.

Why Maffeo, thinkeſt thou not that thou doeſt me pleaſure inough to trouble me with thy odious Letters, but muſt you alſo fret me with the ſight of thy ignominious perſon? I haue wiſhed theſe two dayes, that I might ſée thée to caſt out all the anger and ſpite vnto which thou haſt moued me, vpon thée. But ſéeing thou haſt vowed thy life to my ſeruice, I mean

to

to trie thy faithfulneſſe and obedience : and yet deſire not to haue thy life. I command thée therefore to carry this Letter vnto thy maiſter Sylueſtro : but I will allow thée to reade it before I ſeale it.

With that ſhe felt in her pocket, and with her hand (in colour like to Iuno when ſhe braued the Quéene of loue for the golden Apple before the Troyan youth,) drew forth the Letter and bade me reade it. The meaning I remember to be ſuch.

Eleonora to Sylueſtro.

THe knauery of your *Maffeo*, hath giuen me occaſion to vſe your ſeruice *Sylueſtro*. Therefore if I may be ſo bold with you, I would entreat you to puniſh his knauiſh ſawcineſſe: for becauſe he ſeeth that I make litle account of his maiſters fained loue, he offereth me Letters wherin he painteth his owne paſſions. I haue admoniſhed and warned him to leaue his peeuiſhneſſe; but ſeeing he deſpiſeth my warning, let him feare your threatning. Farewell.

When I had read this Letter, I was in worſe caſe then before. It would be too long for me to make rehearſal in what a paſſionate ſtate I was, both while I heard her raile at me like a raging Lyoneſſe, and when I ſaw by the reading of the Letter how ſhe ſought to be reuenged of me, that I was ready to reſigne vp my life, and to fall downe dead in her preſence, for loue, griefe and feare: and contrarily, gladneſſe and hope made ſuch a cumbate at one inſtant in the midſt of my heart, that I knew no more of my ſelf, then he that was neuer born. At length gathering my ſences togither, I came to my ſelfe; and anſwered her: That whereas ſhe ſometime ſaid, that I was an inſtrument againſt my ſelfe, ſhe ſhould now haue moſt iuſt occaſion to ſay the ſame, and moſt fit matter whereout to gather premiſſes producing the concluſion of her ſaying. And though it be my death (quoth I) to do your command, yet I

will and must obey. With that she hauing sealed the Letter, I toke it and went away, bidding her adieu, with all the humilitie that I could for my life. And posting to my maister, I deliuered him the Letter which was so spitefully written against poore Maffeo, notwithstanding that I was not ignorant of the contents thereof, though my maister knew not so much. But assone as he read the Letter, supposing that I had bene the onely cause of his bad successe in his amours, drewe forth his dagger and threw it at me, & seeing that though the dagger stucke in my legge, yet it had not giuen me my fatall stroke, ran at me with his naked sword, intending fully to glut himselfe with the blood of his innocent Page, and cousin germain (though I as yet then knew not that I was so.) But I stepped aside and got out of the house assone as I could, flying vnto one of our neighbors, who seemed to make much of me, and in whom I had most cõfidence. Vnto him I declared how my maister was fallen out with me; & shewed him the wound which he had giuen me, meaning to slaie me. This man being a poore honest man, and a Barber by his occupation, by name Pharicles, was likewise cunning in Chyrurgerie, & so willingly & so carefully dressed my wound, that I thought him worthy of greater reward then I could giue him. But the smart of the wound, the sorow of my grief, & the torment of loue cast me into such a dangerous disease, that I was in great peril of death, and out of all hope euer to recouer my life againe. After that I had laine in that case six or seuen daies, late in ỹ night came Eleonora vnto me, in the habit of a gentleman Page, because she should not be knowne, & told the Barber Pharicle, that she was my cousin, and that she had brought something to make a confection for me. Wherupon the good Barber rose, & opening his doore let her in and sent her vp to my chamber. Where she seeing that I was alone, fel down on her knees before my bed, and weeping most pittifully, pronounced these words. Pardon me sweet Maffeo, pardon me, & could not for griefe speake one word more, but shed out whole streames of teares, which running downe her cheekes fell on my bed, & in such sort wetted it

as

as if it had bene caſt into ſome riuer. I, amazed at that ſodaine chance, could not tel whether I dreamt, or whether I was awake; for me thought by the voyce, it ſhould be Eleonora, but when I loked on her veſture, I ſuſpected it had bene my maiſter that had repented in ſuch maner, for that he ſo hardly vſed me. But to rid my ſelfe from doubt, I reached the candle that ſtod by my beds head, and loking her in the face, I ſon knew my Eleonora, who was in the like taking that I was when I read that vnfortunate Letter before her. Incontinently, I liſted her from off her knées, embraced her, and kiſſed her on her tender mouth, ſaying. What Eleonora my Lady and miſtreſſe, do you humble your ſelfe after this order vnto your ſeruant? Plucke vp your heart and be of good chéere; and aſke no pardõ at my hands, for you haue not committed any fault againſt your ſeruant. Ah Maffeo (quoth ſhe) my fault is great, and ſo much the greater, becauſe againſt Maffeo. After that we had paſſed on great part of the night in ſuch talke, ſhe in accuſing her ſelfe, and I in iterating my owne worthineſſe, at laſt promiſed each other troth; and agreed to leaue *Conſtantinople*, and flie into *Spaine*. For becauſe ſhe knew that her father would neuer agrée vnto our mariage, ſhe concluded to prouide a good ſumme of money, and many rich iewels, for the eaſier carriage, and ſo to tranſport her ſelfe and me into *Spaine*; there to leade a contented life, vntill ſuch time as we might be reconciled to her father, or Fortune allowed vs to returne. This deuiſe liked me ſo well, that all the medicines in the worlde could not haue cured my diſeaſe ſo well as the preſence of her, for whom I was ſo willing to die. To be ſhort, ſhe appointed me the houre and place where I ſhould méete her when all things were prepared for our voyage. Where I finding her in the ſame habit that ſhe was when ſhe viſited me, we toke ſhippe, and ſayled vnto Saint *Lucar* in *Spaine*, where we liued contentedly and merrily, for the ſpace of fiue or ſix yéeres.

In the meane time you muſt note how that Eleonoras parents maruelling what was become of her, was exceéding ſorowful.

My couſin Sylueſtro, hauing heard of her ſecret and ſuddaine departure and mine alſo, began to ſuſpect that we were togither, and that Eleonora ſent him that Letter but to giue the matter a contrary colour. Wherefore conſidering that the Gods ſo fauoured me, firſt in that my life was ſaued by meanes of the pitifull Midwife, and afterwards that I was loued by ſo noble a Gentlewoman where he was reiected, his conſcience began to prick, and vrged him ſo farre, that on a morning he went to the houſe of Eleonoras father, and declared to him the whole matter. Whereat he wondering, would haue beſought the Magiſtrate to burne Sylueſtro at a ſtake; but that Sylueſtro promiſed him that he would goe to the ende of the world but he would finde vs, and in like manner diſcouer the whole caſe vnto vs, and bring vs home to *Conſtantinople*. In ſo much that fiue yeares being expired, I eſpied my couſin Sylueſtro walking in the Market place, and leaſt he ſhould ſee me, I went homewards to carry the newes vnto Eleonora. But he eſpied me, and followed me to the place where I dwelt, and entering into the Hall, where I ſate with Eleonora, fell downe on his knees, and enformed vs of all the matter: ſhewing vs his teſtimoniall Letters and Paſſeport, from the Citie of *Conſtantinople*: wherin was mentioned that he was purpoſely ſent to ſeeke vs. Beſides he brought Letters written with Eleonoras father, *Don Francéſco de Guerdonas* owne hand. Whereof we were ſo glad, eſpecially Eleonora, that we could not but pardon my maiſter, who now became our ſeruant. You may wel think that we made as ſpædie preparation as we could, to returne to *Conſtantinople*. For within eight daies we had found a ſhip rigged and throughly furniſhed, with prouiſion of victuals, and all things neceſſary, which was bounde to *Conſtantinople*. In which ſhip we conueyed our ſelues with all that we had, and hoyſing ſaile, committed the veſſell to Neptunes mercie. But variable Fortune that cannot be reduced into any order, ſometimes being lighter then the winde, and fleeing more ſwiftly then an arrow being ſhot out of the bow, and ſometimes heauy, and marching ſlowly, and laſtly, reſembling the Tortyſe.

Variable

Variable Fortune I say, being loth that we should reioyce of our felicitie without any proofe of finister happe, raised such a tempest on the sea, that the ship being battered with the swelling waues, cloue asunder and burst into peeces. So that euery man catching hold, some on a peece of a mast, some on a peece of a bord, some on the ship hatches. Eleonora hauing a young child by her, (for God had enriched vs with a yong Spaniard called Alonso, though the poore babe was as soone hated of Fortune as it was borne, therein not vnlike his vnfortunate father; for it was but three moneths olde when we came to sea) she emptied one of our greatest chests immediatly, and therin clapped her selfe and her yong Alonso: stirring the boate vp and downe with a peece of an Oare which she had spied in the ship. My cousin Sylueſtro reaching to two or three Oares, thinking to lade them vnder him, tumbled into the sea. I for my part had gotten a great peece of Cooke, which such as it was, by the helpe of the Gods saued my life. But nothing so galled me, as that I saw my onely Eleonora and Alonso, floating ore the terrible sea within the chest, and yet I could not come neere her; or that the traiterous waues would not driue my cooke the same way that the chest was carried. For the winde blew so crabbedly that the chest floated one way, and I with my cursed cooke was driuen quite contrary. So that in short space I lost the sight of the chest, and therwith, of all my ioy. Imagine gentle shepheards, in what plight poore Masseo was at that instant. For as long as I could see my Eleonora and her Alonso, I perceiued not the perillous case I was in, but after I had lost that blessed sight, I marked in what daunger I was, to be swallowed vp by the greedie waues at euery moment. Yet the griefe which I suffered, for that I knew not how Eleonora fared permitted me not to care for my selfe, who almost an hundreth times had purposed to leaue my cooke and cast my selfe into the depth of the roaring sea, and verie Court where Neptune sate, to raile at him for his fierce gouernment. But yet I know not how, my dreadfull Destinies inueigling my heart with vaine hope, reserued me to worse mishaps. After

that I had rowled vp and downe the seas a whole night, in the morning betimes, I espied a great ship of war on the sea, so that I being something comforted at the sight thereof, began to call vnto them that were aboord of her, as loude as my voyce could reach. But the Marriners, though they heard not my voyce, by reason of the noyse of the waues which did beate against the belly of the great ship; yet séeing me, considered in what necessitie I was, and stirring the shippe as néere as the steerman could, they threw out a cable rope which I catched by the ende, and so got into the shippe. Thus God had redressed my necessitie, howsoeuer it fared with poore Eleonora and Alonso. My life was saued, but my sorrow nothing ceased; yea encreased rather. For thinking on Eleonora and Alonso, I was so besought with griefe that my life was in greater daunger, then when I laie rowling vp and downe the rising waues on the Tarke. I had not bene in the ship aboue the space of three dayes, but the winde blew so slowly, that we were not the better for our sayles, but were compelled to vse all the Oares that were in the shippe. As we had thus rowed one day and a night, we espied a chest fléeting on the sea, which by reason of the lightnesse, was carred away more swifter with the streame then our great ship. At length it approched so néere vs, that I might well perceiue it to be ỹ same chest wherein my Eleonora with her childe was in. And when I saw that no bodie was in the chest, suppose (gentle shepheardes) whether I had not sufficient occasion to thinke that Fortune had made Eleonora and my vnfortunate boy Alonso, a praie vnto the hungry. Whereupon I fell into such a trance, that hauing by the diligence of the Marriners recouered my sences againe, I heard them say that they had neuer séene the like extasie. Oh spiteful Fortune, whē she beginneth to frown on mē, she neuer ceaseth vntill she maketh them most miserable, & bringeth them into dispaire. And when they are in such distresse that they thinke it impossible to be worse handeled, then she to shewe her power, augmenting their euill, causeth thē to acknowledge their heresie. As I for example, who could

be

be in woꝛſe caſe then I was, when ſpꝛawling on the coꝛke amidſt the raging waues, I was in daunger euery moment to be deuoured of Neptune? Yet I fared woꝛſe when I loſt the ſight of my déereſt Eleonora. And a thouſand times greater was my miſery, when I ſaw the emptie cheſt. At which time, curſing the winds as helping cauſes to my miſhap, the ſea as gréedily deſiring the pꝛaie, the ſhip as the inſtrument that bꝛought me into that Charybdis of calamitie, the celeſtiall Planets as hard harted ſéeing me iniured, and not reuenging my wꝛong, the ſtars as witneſſes of my miſery, & Foꝛtune as the efficient cauſe, yea *primum mobile*, and only authoꝛ of all what miſchiefe ſoeuer had betided me; I would haue caſt my ſelfe ouer bꝛoꝛd: but my intent being hindꝛed by the Marriners, I was foꝛced to comfoꝛt my ſelfe as much as the greatneſſe of my hap could permit, and to arme my-ſelfe with that old poeſie, *Dum Spiro, Spero.* Though my greateſt hope was diſpaire, and my life woꝛſe then death.

Within a fewe dayes after, the Marriners taking occaſion by a gale of winde which blew ſomething ſtrongly, hoyſed vp their ſailes, and ſpéedily arriued out within two dayes after. Where inſtontinently I went to my father in laws *Don Franceſco de Guerdonas* houſe, and declared the whole hiſtoꝛie of our nauigation vnto him, how we ſuffered ſhipwꝛacke, how I ſaw Syluéſtro my couſin fall into the ſea, how I had loſt Eleonora and my child: how I was ſaued in the other ſhippe. But leaſt I ſhould kill the olde Knights heart, I ſuppꝛeſſed the ſight of the emptie cheſt. *Don Franceſco* and his Ladie, glad to heare their ſon in law ſpeake, but ſoꝛꝛie to vnderſtand the ſum of his wofull relation, fell both in an extaſie. At length the old man comming to himſelfe ſayd. Ah my deare ſonne Maffeo, whoſe pꝛeſence I haue wiſhed foꝛ ſo long time! What a diſaſter chance is this: what ſpiteful miſhap: what an hoꝛrible euent! It ſéemeth, that Foꝛtune (that monſtrous Goddeſſe) hath endeuoured to exerciſe what miſchiefe ſhée can vppon thée and thine. Ah Maffeo, thou ſeeſt that theſe ſiluer haires which couer my face, are tokens how neare I appꝛoach to my

my graue; and yet this heart, which is inclosed in this weake and feeble bodie is such, that might I with shield & and speare encounter with fickle Fortune, I doubt not but I should become victorious. But alasse force, manhood, courage, or valour, cannot preuaile in this case; and therefore onely resteth, that we do on the armour of hope. It is not impossible, (seeing my daughter and her infant were so well placed in a chest) that we should heare of her, and perhaps before we are aware, may see her. Wherefore, seeing the Gods haue saued you, & amidst such a multitude of misfortunes, brought you home to your country, I thinke it not amisse that you should acquaint your selfe with the estate of your goods, and take possession of such lands and houses which your honourable father dying, your traiterous cousin Syluestro inherited. Whereunto I answered, that well I might do it, but neuer should enioy any pleasure though all the goods, riches, and kingdomes of the world were mine, vnlesse I had my Eleonora and her childe present with me: and therefore I meant not to staie at *Constantinople*, but to trauel vp and downe the world so long till I had heard of her. Neuertheless I was constrained to yeeld vnto the importunate request of my father in law, who would haue me to be inherited in all my goods whatsoeuer, before I departed from *Constantinople*. Which done, I toke my leaue of my kinde father and mother in law, (who so wept at my departure, that it might haue moued any man to commiseration) and so leauing them, I betoke me to my Fortune, meaning to trie whether she would not some time turne her wheele, and become more fauourable, then she was accustomed to be. After I had trauelled by sea and land, so far that I marched through most parts of Europe, through a great part of *Asia* & *Affricke*, at last I shipped from the West Indies, towards *Spain*, where I had bene three times before. For I know not how, my mind gaue me that if she liued, I should heare of her there, thinking that if she could land no where but in *Spaine*, seeing that our ship was drowned neare the coast thereof. But all helped not; in all those three yeeres (for so long had I trauelled sithens

my

my laſt departure from *Conſtantinople*) no liuing creature could tell me any newes of Eleonora or the childe. And therefore I would not returne to my country, but thought to runne ouer all *Spayne*, and throughly ſearch the whole country, for I hoped not to finde her in any place, if I might not heare of her in *Spaine*. Though my hope was little or none to finde her at all, conſidering that I had ſéene the vnhappie cheſt ſpoyled of her carriage. When I had raunged vp and downe the drie fields and ſandie medowes of the country nine dayes, at length I came into a moſt pleaſant gréene, through which there ran as delectable a riuer as mans eye might behold, the bankes whereof were beſet with Lemmons and Orange trées; which by reaſon of their fruite caſt forth ſuch a fragrant and odoriferous ſmell, that the verie odour thereof did perfume the ayre in ſuch manner that it did ſpread the ſame ſmell ouer all the neighbour gréenes and medowes of that quarter. So that the coldneſſe of the riuer, the ſhadow of the trées, and the odoriferous ſent of the fruite, enticed me to reſt my weary limmes on the riuer ſide; where the pleaſing noyſe of the murmuring ſtreame did bring me into the ſwéeteſt ſléepe I could haue wiſhed. You muſt note that the banke of the other ſide of the riuer was ſomething high, by reaſon whereof, my deare Eleonora (whom I ſo painfully ſought) laie in the graſſe againſt the bancke on the other ſide of the riuer, not being ſéene. Who whileſt I was a ſléepe chanced to riſe vp, & ſéeing me lie with my face vpward, knew me. How glad ſhe was (gentle ſhepheards) I leaue vnto your diſcretion to iudge of. But ſhe willing to trie what remembrance I had of her, plucked off a lemmon, in colour like to the Indian gold, and in it ingraued this diſtichon.

Heſperio ſub ſole virum requieſcere, gaudet:
(Cum prole complaudens) Eleonora, tuum.

And caſting the carued lemmon on my breaſt, ſhe lurked behinde the banke leaſt I ſhould ſée her. But I ſlept ſo ſound-

ly, that although I felt the lemmon fall iust vpon the midst of my breast, yet I started not, for in that paradice I feared nothing: but imagining that the lemmon was shaken off by the wind, I was loth to giue ouer my slæpe so soone, and therefore I turned my selfe to fall into slæpe againe. But as I held the lemmon that was cast at me in my hand, I felt that it was something rough; willing therefore to sée what kinde of lemmon it was, I read the posie, and no sooner espied the name of Eleonora, but my heart seemed to leape out of my bodie for ioy. Yet, because I saw not her nor any man in the world nére me, I could not tell what to imagine of that lemmon; but concluded at last, that the Gods had sent me that ominious token, in signe that I should heare of Eleonora and the childe. At length she called on the other side of the banke, Maffeo, Maffeo, why doest thou not speake to Eleonora? Wherwith I as a man raging madde, looked sometimes vp to the knées, sometimes downe in the riuer, and sometimes ouer the medow, and séeing no mortall wight, I broke out into this open exclamation.

O miserable wretch that I am! I ranne ouer the world to séeke my beloued Eleonora, & now I haue found her, I cannot sée her. Where art thou Eleonora, where art thou? Or doth an Echo rebound the sound of thy voyce from the other part of the world vnto mine eares? Or do I dreame? Or do I imagine to heare, that which I do not? Or is it the ghoast of Eleonora that calleth vnto her Maffeo? And if that be, why am not I a ghoast also? Or haue the gods hearing her bewaile her miseries, pitied her complaints, and changed her into one of these delectable lemmon trées? Or haue the sacred nymphs being ranished with the loue of Eleonoras beautie, led her with them into the secret bowels of this pleasant riuer? Surely I beléeue it be so. And therfore Maffeo make hast to follow her. Cast thy selfe into the siluer streames Maffeo, and they will bring thée to thy wished and long sought for Eleonora.

Thus I being readie to leape into the water, Eleonora rose vp and came on the toppe of the banke, right ouer against me,

me, saying. Staie Maffeo, staie, Eleonora is here; and here maist thou behold thy son Alonso. At the sight whereof I was so amazed, that I knew not whether I did but dreame, or whether it was so indeed. At last knitting my wits togither, I perceiued that I was not deceiued or inchanted, but that with my naturall eyes, I beheld my wife and my sonne being a prittie tall wagge about foure yeares old. But to see the churlish nature of Fortune, who though she seeme to fauour men, yet she doth in such manner, with wrinkeled frownes intermingle her fauours, that they haue no cause fully to reioyce of her benefits. And so it fared with vs. For what greater chance in the world might haue glutted our harts with ioy more then this, that I seeking Eleonora found her, and Eleonora seeking Maffeo, found him likewise; each of them saluting the other, and speaking the one to the other? And yet contrarily, what greater griefe then this, that we had founde each other, saw each other, and spake one to another, and yet could not come one by the other; being separated by that, being something large and verie deepe. I could not swimme, Eleonora lesse: and so we were in the pittifullest taking that might be in the world.

Eleonora tolde mee, that shee had trauelled one day and a halfe along the banke side of the Riuer, and had seene no bridge to passe ouer it from the place where she was, vnto the side where I was. In so much that wee could not imagine how wee might do to trauell both togither; for wee were loath (seeing we had so happily met with each other) to part againe, fearing least we should hazard our selues into daunger of our former mischance. What remedie, I wanted my sword to cut downe trees to serue me for a bridge, and lose wood there was none. Nothing rested but this, that wee should trauell along the Riuer, by the bancke side, shee of the one side of it, and I on the other side of it, vntill such time as wee had founde meanes to get togither.

After we had marched in that ſort foure or fiue houres, (in which ſpace ſhe had declared me how ſhe was ſaued from the preſent danger of drowning, by the meanes of a Spaniſh galley; how that the chiefe ruler of the ſlaues that rowed in the galley, kept her in cloſe priſon, becauſe ſhe would not conſent to his wicked and filthie deſires; and how that by meanes of one of the galiy ſlaues after ſhe had bene in that miſerable and loathſome captiuitie two yeares and a halfe, ſet on ſhore and brought to a country village not paſſing fortie mile from the place where I found her) we met with a ſhepheard & his wife, who told vs that we ſhould within a ſmall myle finde a bridge to paſſe ouer the riuer, whereof we were paſſing glad. And in ſhort ſpace reaching to the bridge, I paſſed ouer to the other ſide, and embraced my louing Eleonora and my yong Olphonſus, who beganne prettily well to prattle in the Spaniſh language, for his mother vſed continually to ſpeake Spaniſh vnto him. But marke (gentle ſhepheards) how Fortune ſtill couetted to bar vs from perfect felicitie. For as we were thus embracing one the other, and reioycing of our good ſucceſſe after ſo much ill lucke, and ſo many daungerous chances; came there tall lubberly Moores, each hauing a good cudgell in his fiſt, who approaching neere vs, and being enamoured with the beautie of Eleonora, preſently fell vppon me, and binding me hand and foote, rolled me to the bankſide, where they left me. But Eleonora and the boy they carried with them. Whither I know not, vntill the next morning that ſhe hauing eſcaped from the villaines, (who were ſo buſie in robbing a Farmers houſe, that they toke but little regard of her) told me her ſelfe, being returned to the ſame place where they left me bound. You muſt note that the theeues had ſet Eleonora with her child vpon this horſe which they had ſtolen, with all the furniture belonging vnto it, from ſome Farmer by the way, and had loaden it with ſwordes and other weapons, with all which, ſhe ranne away, and reſted not till ſhe approched the bridge, neere which I laie bound. I verie glad to ſee her and my ſonne, incontinently caſt off all the weapons and other traſh, ſauing

this

this sworde which I kept for my defence. And thinking it scarce safe to staie long in that place, we rode on a good pace, till we reached to a small village, where we lighted. Assone as we perceiued the darknesse of the night to flie from the beautifull glimps of Ladie Aurora, to horse we hied, and roade on stil towards the next hauen. But Phœbus darting his beames on the maine, so enflamed the aire with the heate thereof, that we were compelled about midday to light, and to shroude our selues from the Sunne, vnder a tree that grew in the midst of the high way. The passing heate made me slumber, and from slumbring I fel so fast a sleepe, that awaking, I missed Eleonora; & what was become of her I knew not, but that the childe which was by me cried, and tolde me as well as it could, that the naughtie man had runne away with his mother. Whereby I suspected, that some villaine or other was by Fortune suborned againe to crosse me with her currish enuy. In what grief and perplexity I was at that present time, you may think (gentle shepheards) by your selues, how you should be encouraged if you were in the like case, yet seeing it was not ỹ first time that I had bene in like taking, I stucke to patience, and cleaned to hope. For my heart was so hardned in vnfortunate euents and vnhappie chances, that contemning Fortune and all her power, I could better behaue my self in aduersitie then I was accustomed. And therfore spedily leaping on horsback, I toke vp my Alonsus with me, and roade till I came to the next village, where, leauing the childe with an honest shepheard (vnto whom I declared the case wherein I was, promising him to reward him thoroughly for the boyes maintenance till I fetched him thence, which I hoped would not haue bene long) and desiring him to vse it well, I posted thence to sweete Eleonora, that poore Eleonora whose life was so miserable, because so deare to me. As I coursed with my steed vp and downe the wildest and solitariest places of the country, at length this morning (being the first day that I lost Eleonora) I fell into the hands of the same villaines that toke away Eleonora, the first time when they tyed me by the vnfortunate bridge. This on-

euerie side assailed mee, some behinde, some before, and some of them on each side of me: for they had encreased their company by foure men, so that now there were seuen of them. Yet by the helpe of the Gods and my sword, I so acquitted my selfe, that with no worse woundes then these, I got from them; and recouered this scarfe which Eleonora for haste forgotte and left behinde her when she ranne away with this horse.

Thus (gentle shepheardes) haue you heard the whole historie of my life, and I hope you be satisfied as concerning your question. Now I am to request you to giue me leaue to follow on my iourney, for vntill I finde Eleonora, I may not or cannot rest. And so Maffeo, thanking them all for their curtuous entertainment, toke his leaue and departed.

Now therefore leauing him to seeke Eleonora, we will proceed in rehearsing the successe of Perierios strange loue. For he being intreated by his sisters, to tell them whom he loued, though he could not name her, for that he knew her not, yet he let them know as much as he could tell, and declared the whole matter vnto them, how he mette with that Ladie by chance, how that she asked him his name and countrey, and how therewith she conuaied her selfe out of sight on the suddeine. Euphilia and Perina, were very sorie, that their brothers loue was of such kinde, that it might not be remedied but by giuing ouer loue. For it was altogither casuall and accidentarie, neither might they hope that euer he might enioy his loue, for that there was nothing lesse like, yea it seemed rather impossible. For they considered first that he had neuer seen the Ladie before that time, nor after; by reason whereof, though he chaunced to see her, perchaunce should not know her; secondly they marked that he knew not her name, her parentes, or Countrey, to enquire after her, so that the neerest place he knew where he might finde her, was the world, and the propriest indiuidium to denominate her, was a certaine woman.

And lastly, they perpended that shee sought for some other

Knight

Knight who had her heart in holde; and therefore a verie hard matter, though Perierio had founde her, to obtaine her loue. All this considered and weighed, they besought to rote out loue out of Perierios breast, which Cupid had so pierced with his darte, that all the perswasions of the world could not serue to extinguish the fire which was kindeled in his heart, and increased more and more daily. In so much that the fire being enflamed, and beginning to torment him with insupportable paine, he determined to commit himselfe and his case to Fortune, hoping that as the cause of his griefe was accidentary, so the effect might by chaunce be redressed and remedied.

Perierio thus resolued, asked and obteined leaue (though with much adoo) of his aged father to trauell into farre countries, to see and learne such thinges as a yong Gentleman ought to knowe, alleaging that there was nothing more peremptorie to youth, then to passe ouer those yeares which are apt to comprehend and learne, in soule obscuritie of ignorance. In so much that a yong man that will liue in credite and reputation, ought to trauell into strauge countries, to be acquainted with forren manners and gouernments to learne tongues, to haunt Vniuersities, and insinuate himselfe into the company of learned men. All this father (quoth Perierio) is necessarie for them that will haue their liues famous, and death honourable.

Old Camillo replied with Horace:

Cœlum non animum mutant, qui trans mare currunt.

Men change not their manners, but the aire, that runne from country to country, Perierio. And therefore I am not of their opinion that beleeue that men by farre trauelling from home, can attaine to wise dome and humane prouidence. For I thinke, that that is not gotten by running into farre countries, or by liuing in exile farre from home, but rather by continuall conuersation and conuersation of wise men. Yet Perierio saith that here in this multitude of shepheards little wisedome is to be learned,

learned, or litle profit to experience and prudence to be reaped, I am content that thou goe to the Vniuersitie of Salamanca, which is within this kingdome, and there to repeate such rudiments as thou hast begunne at *Rome*, that thou maist afterward be apt to greater studies, and to exorne and beautifie thy minde with the brightnesse of the liberall sciences, which are the lights of humane vnderstanding: lastly, also to sense thy minde with wise and sage precepts of Philosophie, that after thou hast attained to the knowledge of naturall things, thou maist vse morall Philosophie to moderate thy affections, and to follow that which thou knowest to be honourable and profitable, shunning the contrary. Then art thou fully armed to passe forward, & to trauell into other countries to be acquainted with straunge customes, or to learne diuerse tongues. Otherwise what profiteth it to haue coursed through sundry and straunge regions, and to haue seene many kingdomes, & manners of diuers nations; if he that trauelleth wanteth the ripenesse of wit and iudgement to reape profit by his being abroad. Therefore Perierio, thinke not that I disallow of trauelling, but would haue them that take that course, not to haue their stomakes emptie; but first guard themselues with the knowledge of Philosophie and humanitie, and furnish themselues with prouision necessary to such iourneying. For I remember that Homer and Virgil to describe and forme an heroical man adorned with all vertues, fained that Vlysses and Æneas, had trauelled through all the world: and not thinking this sufficient, they fained that they descended into hell, and went into the Elizian fields, and knew those that were in them.

Perierio, hearing his father alledge such points as made for his purpose, was exceeding glad, at length obteined his fathers good will to leaue the country and rusticke company of shepheards, to haunt the comely & seemly conuersation of scholers, though his minde was more moued to his Ladie then to the Vniuersitie whither old Camillo determined to send him. And although Euphilia and Perina knew the colour wherwith he painted the occasion of his trauelling, yet they reserued the

whole

whole ſorrow to themſelues, without declaring it to their father, fearing leaſt he ſhould ſo be diſcouraged and diſcomforted thereby, that he might hinder his health, and for greefe fall into ſickneſſe, conſidering that old age is ſo ſubiect to diſeaſes, that the leaſt cauſe in the worlde of diſcontent is ſufficient to ſubuert the eſtate of health in an aged perſon. But Perierio lifted vp with the wings of hope, in a maner doubted not but his fortune would be more fauourable then ſhe had bene, taking his leaue of his father and his ſiſters, betooke himſelfe to his iourney: intending to go to the Vniuerſitie of Salamanca, as his father wiſhed, but in ſuch order that he would take the neareſt way about, to ſée if Fortune would once againe fauour him with that light which made ſuch an impreſſiõ in his hart, that neither continuance of time, nor contrarietie of thought, was able to raſe out the print thereof.

Thus Perierio, hauing trauelled fiue dayes through woods, dales, buſhes, greenes, medowes, hilles, vallies, and other ſolitary places, and yet had not met with that which he ſought, nor ſéene any likelihood thereof, began to be wonderfully diſcomforted, and thought his paine vainly beſtowed, ſéeing that Fortune was blinde and made no diſcretion of perſons, but euer wrought by chaunce, beſtowing her fauours not where ſhe would, but where they fell. Perierio thus diſcomforted, climing on the top of a hill, heard a moſt ſweet and melodious voyce ſounding to a harpe within a litle wood where the high Oakes made a pleaſant ſhadow. And drawing neare to the wood, he marked that it was the voice of a ſhepheard, who after ſhe had ended her ſong, beganne thus to complaine of her miſfortune. No doubt but all the ſtarres that from the ſkies ſend light on the earth, haue agreed and conſented to my miſhap and ill Fortune. Neither is there any thing on earth, that may yeeld me any comfort or conſolation. But loue which is ſubiect to feare, turneth and conuerteth my ſorrowfull ſoule into pure ice. Ah Fortune, how canſt thou be ſo cruell? How canſt thou forbeare to ſuccour a heart ſo diſtreſſed as mine, ſéeing that I am falſly ſuſpected of diſloyaltie? And therefore I

must accuse thée Lexander: thou art the man whome I must burthen with the cause of all my griefe. Vnto thée do I discouer and vnfold my plaints, hard hearted and cruell Lexander, in whome no pittie taketh place. For if thou werest of my side, I would not care though heauen, earth, Loue and Fortune were against me, and enemies vnto me. After that she had ended her complaint, she fetched a heauie sigh from her heart, and therewith wept so bitterly, that Perierio might easily perceiue that she was in that pittifull and lamentable taking, by reason that her husband falsly suspected her to be disloyall and vnfaithfull. So that he entred into the wood and found her sitting vpon the grasse in the shade, neare to a delectable Fountaine: which issuing from the toppe of the hill, ranne along a great part of the wood in diuerse places. But when she salue Perierio comming neare her, though she was something discontented that she was interpelled amidst her passions; yet beholding that he séemed by his behauiour to be some shepheard of great account, being most curtuously by him gréeted, saluted him likewise with such modestie, that hée beganne to misdoubt whether she were Alcida the promised spouse of Marcelio. (For he called to minde how that Marcelio had told him and his sisters, that Alcida had clothed her selfe in the habit of a shepheard, because she might be the harder to be found by him) and therefore spake thus vnto her. Beautifull shepheard (for so your coat bewraieth, though your singular grace make me supect that your calling is contrarie to your colours,) I shall desire you not to be discomforted, though I haue troubled you at this time intruding my selfe into your cõpany, for as I haue discurtuously offended, so shall you finde me most readie to make amendes for my boldnesse. Gentle shepheard (answered she) I am so forsaken of all comfort and solace, that good company cannot offend me, and therfore where no fault is cõmitted, there is nothing to be misconstred of. And to put you out of suspitiõ, know that I am a shepheard as wel in vocation as in habit; called Ismenia, and borne neare to the Temple of Minerua, in the kingdome of *Portugal*.

But

But I pray you, what chaunce hath brought you hither into these countries, or do you by hap dwell here about? In truth Ismenia, (quoth Perierio) my ill fortune hath brought me hither, for I neither dwell here, nor euer was in this place before. I was born in *Italy*, but with my father and sisters transported to the fields annexed to the riuer Epla, about foure or fiue daies iourny hence. I know the place very well quoth Ismenia, it is not far from the pasture where fair Euphilia so renowned in all that quarter doth fede her sheepe. I heare you name my sister (quoth Perierio) and am glad to haue met with one that is not wholly vnacquainted with our family. What say you (quoth Ismenia?) In truth vnto a woman so distressed as I am, being desolate and forsaken of my louing husband, nothing could haue happened more wished for, then to haue met with such honest and vertuous company as it hath pleased the gods to comfort me withall, in directing your self towards these woods. And forasmuch as I am in mind to go to the temple of Diana, if your iourny lie that way, I shal think my selfe among so many mishaps, to haue receiued no small fauour of Fortune. As for me (quoth Perierio) where I am I know not, nor whither I may go, and therfore am enduced to think that Fortune beginneth to repēt her self of her shrewdnesse, in that she hath fauoured me with so worthie a guide as your selfe, to leade me forth of my straying errours to some place where I may enquire for directions in my iourney. And I am most passing glad, that you intende to goe towardes the Temple of Diana: of the sumptuousnesse whereof, I haue heard such famous relation among the shepheards, in the vilage nēer my fathers farme, that I haue a long time bin moued with great desire to see the same. And therfore faire shepheard, take which way you will, and Perierio will followe you. Ismenia glad that this shepheard was in her companie, beganne to march, hoping before Phœbus should attaine to his Westerne home, that they should reach to a farme where she thought that they might be lodged that night. But to shun tediousnesse in their wearisome iourny; Perierio desired her to recount & declare the

cause of her griefe vnto him. Ismenia answered, that although the memorie thereof could not but pierce her heart with the prick of exceeding sorrow, yet notwithstanding because he desired, whom she could not say nay, she was content to make a pastime of her miserie. And thus began the history of her Tragedie.

In our village dwelled a certain Farmer that had a comely youth to his sonne, in beautie passing all the shepheardes thereabout, being called Alanio: who feeding his sheepe in a pasture ground, not farre from ours, vsed sometimes to come to me and keepe me company, sitting in the shadowe by me, and telling of tales, or passing ouer the time with some other kinde of honest recreation. Wherby at last grew such familiar acquaintance betwixt vs, that loue ioyning our hearts together, we were not wel while we were separated the one from the others company. To be short, he loued me, and was loued of me. There was in the same village a faire beautifull shepheard called Seluagia, who for her beautie might be compared with Venus in the valley before Parys, when she wonne the golden Apple. Of which shepheard my Alanio became enamoured; whereupon I to be reuenged of him, fained to fauour Lexander his deadly enemy. Which fained loue of mine, at length by reason of the acquaintance that grew betweene vs, changed into such pure and true loue, that by reason thereof I am fallen into this miserie, in which I now finde my selfe at this present.

Now, continuing the history of my life, you shall know that Lexanders father called Filene, sometimes frequented my fathers house, by reason of certaine businesse that my father and he had betweene them, concerning Oxen and Kyne, and seeing me, although he was something old, yet he fell in loue with me, and that so greatly, that he became fowlish, mad, and franticke. He became so importunate vnto me, and troubling me aboue a thousand times, daily declared me his passions and griefe, but all could not helpe. For I would neuer giue eare to his prattle, nor marke what he said, and though he had bene

much

much yonger or lesse aged, and by many partes more perfect then he was, yet for him could I not haue forgotten his sonne Lexander, who had so wonne my heart, that I had wholly giuen him the possession thereof. The old man knew not what friendship was betweene his sonne and me, for Lexanher was so obeysant and dutifull, that he behaued himselfe secretly in woing me, least his father knowing thereof, sheuld haue rebuked him, and haue occasion to be angry with him. And in like maner was Lexander altogither ignorant of his fathers folly, who because he should not giue his sonne example of lightnesse, toke all the regard he might to his loue from him. Neuertheless the foolish cockescombe ceased not to molest me with importunate requestes to take him to my husband. He made me wonderfull large proffers, he promised to giue me many cloathes and iewels, and he sent me many Letters, hoping thereby to change my minde. In his time he had bene a shepheard most excellently quallified, eloquent in speech and wittie: which you may easily gather by a Letter which he wrote me, and I yet remember.

Filene to Ismenia.

FAire shepheard, loue is cause of all such fault as I can commit in writing vnto you; hoping that I haue not committed any in louing you. And if perhaps my Letter be troublesome vnto you, beleeue certainly, that I alreadie feare the answere you will make. I haue a thousand times signified and declared vnto you, what affection I beare you, and in recompence thereof, you take pleasure in mocking me. You openly laugh at me to see me like to die for loue of you; but as for me I am glad to see you laugh, though it be to my ruine and destruction. For when I remember and thinke of my euill, and see that you take pleasure therein, reioycing at my miserie; I perceiue that you wil not remedie my grief, in so much that it were an exceeding folly for me to regard your mocking; seeing that my life and death consisteth in you, to dispose of me as you

please. If you aske why I should loue you? I answer, because I am forced, and cannot but loue you; in so much that though I might liue and not loue you, yet I had rather to die, then so to liue. For when I remember your graces and perfections, I cannot but iudge them happier that die for loue of you, then those that can beholde you without admiring your exceeding vertues. For, I cannot be perswaded that a man may die more happily, then he who loseth his life by reason of such heauenly beautie as yours; which hath so pierced my breast, that I am not mine owne but yours. For assone as I saw you, I began to loue, and to pine for griefe. And if you say that I am to be blamed because I am amourous and yet old; in that respect I sue for remedie vnto you: seeing that I haue not so greatly offended in louing you, as in knowing you so late. For I acknowledge that I am olde, and I am not a little grieued that this my paine is not as auntient as the course of my age. And I am sorry that I might not haue loued you from the first day that I was borne, as well as since the first houre that I saw you, certifying you that this loue shall dure and continue till death. Maruell not sweete, to see me graie and wrinkled; and though you surpasse me in valour, yet I thinke it but small reason that a man should lose his paie and salarie vnder this colour, that he is an old souldier. The new built houses are not comparable to the auncient buildings of *Rome*: and commonly all men alwaies say, that among all things, the olde is the best. Loue would not vntill this present time make me feele the pinching paine of amorous passions; because he wel knew that affection was more firme, and fancie lesse fickle in an old man as I am, then in tender age; where euery loke is loue, and euery face a new fancie. I am firme and constant to loue you for euer; and olde, neuer to be loued as long as I liue. Yong men that say they loue, are double and subtil; they faine but not fancie, their forehead is marked with Venus badge, but their heart neuer felt Cupids shafte. And when they plead for mercy, alleaging that they die for loue, then are they lesse subiect to passion and most free from fancie. Their changeable affection,

affection,is assured libertie : their passion,passime:their loue, a custome and not a paine. Thinke not swéete,that I am like the amorous youth, who hauing receiued a faucur of his mistresse, vaunteth and boasteth thereof to all the worlde : for though I had receiued ten thousand, I should be as constant and firme in kéeping them secret. But as I sée you disposed and bent to worke my death,I feare that I shall endure much torment,and haue occasion to say litle,and brag lesse. Yet the chéefest fauour whereof I may boast,is to die for loue of Ismenia.With what great reason may I finde fault with the time, considering that I who loue you most,am least estæmed. But alasse I loued you too late, and séeing I was not borne at the same time that you were,it is reason that I should die for loue of you.Ah faire shepheard, had my Fortune bene such,that I might haue bene of your time, I had had that which had bene sufficient to winne your loue, and to deserue fauour of you. For though it becommeth no man to blaze his owne praises, yet affection forceth me to say, that among all the yong men of our time, none might compare with me, at dauncing, leaping, foteball,handball,bowle, bowe,cithren, pipe,flute,and all such kindes of exercise, wherewith our country youths recreate themselues, and winne the heartes of their mistresses. But (ah cruell chance!) what serueth either that which is,or that which hath bin,vnto him poore wreth,that is buried in the bowels of forgetfulnesse,because he is nére vnto his death?In the meane time,may it please you to consider by that which I haue said,that the glory of your perfectiõ which at this present maketh you famous to all the country,shal finally fade, as the pride of the swéete violet decaieth with the fall of the sommer. Now you are hard as a rock, and cruel, but when you shall be ouertaken with age,then shall you want the libertie and force wherewith now you disdaine me. For this is the reuenge which loue taketh of you, that hee then bringeth you into deadly paine and torments, when hope beginneth to faile you.

Filene sent me this Letter and many more, with other Songs and Sonnets, wherewith if I had bene as greatly moued as contented and delighted, he had iudged himselfe happie, and I had bene ill wedded. But it was impossible to finde any meanes whereby the picture & image of my beloued Lexander, might be rased out of my heart. For he so pleased me, and was so constant and perfect in loue, that his will and mine was but one will, his word and mine one word, and his heart and mine one heart. Neuer did he performe lesse in déed, then in word he promised. His doings were alwaies correspondent to his sayings. And as for me, what Lexander liked, I could not mislike, and whatsoeuer displeased him, was horrible to Ismenia. In this pleasant life and swéet concord, hauing passed certaine yeares, we purposed to confirme & establish our content, and to signe our wished desire with the seale of honest and chast marriage. And although Lexander before he would take me to his wife, intended to speake vnto his father first, and to aske his consent as it beséemed an obedient sonne to do, yet when I had aduertised him how that his father would not be willing to agrée vnto that match, by reason of the foolish desire he had himself to take me in marriage: he estéeming more of his owne content and the estate of his owne life, then of his due obeysance towards his father, concealed the matter. So that this vnfortunate marriage, was made with the consent and good will of my father, at whose house the wedding was kept: where there was such feastes, games, sports, & pastimes held, in respect of our marriage, that it was spoken off in all the boroughs and villages thereabout. When the amorous olde man knew that his owne sonne had depriued him of his loue, he became so furious against Lexander and me, that he hated vs both, and abhorred vs worse then death it self, in such maner that he would neuer after sée vs, or come neare vs.

On the other side, a certaine shepheard of the same village, called Felisarde, who so fancied Lexander, that she almost fell madde for loue of him (who made no account of her by reason that he loued me so well, and because she was an elderly

and

and nothing well complexioned,) seeing that he whom she so dearly loued had wedded me, almost fell into dispaire. In so much that our marriage bred vs two deadly enemies. The angrie old man to haue occasion to disherite his sonne, determined to marry some faire yong woman, by whome he might haue children. But though he was exceeding rich, yet all the shepheards of our country disdained to be married vnto him, except Felisarde onely, who to haue opportunitie to allure my husband to her vnlawfull and dishonest lust, (for she had not as yet forgotten the loue of Lexander) willingly tooke old Filene to her husband. She had not long time bene married, but she began to practise meanes to gaine the loue of my husband, and for that intent she sent a mayd that serued her, called Sylueria, vnto Lexander, to tell him that if he would graunt her her will, she would obtaine pardon for him from his father, and besides, she would do him much pleasure, and shewe him great fauour: but she could neuer corrupt him with all her large proffers & faire promises to consent to her wicked will. Wherefore, she considering that she was so despised and so little regarded of Lexander, began mortally to hate him, and endeuoured continually to moue her husband more and more to indignation against his sonne. Neither was she content with that, but determined also to practise a straunge and villainous treason against vs both. For she had in such maner wonne the heart of Sylueria her mayd, by reason of her flattering promises and other fauours which she had done her, that she was readie to do whatsoeuer she would haue her, although it had bene against Lexander, whom she respected for the time that she had serued in his fathers house. So that they secretly consulted among themselues, how they might be reuenged of me, and at the houre appointed for the execution thereof, Sylueria went forth of the village, and comming to a certaine greene neare the riuer, where Lexanders vsed to feed his sheepe, she stepped vnto him, and with a troubled countenance as if she had some matter of great importance to tell him, spake vnto him in this ...er. Ah Lexander, how well and prudently haue you done

in eſchuing the loue of your wicked mother in laſwe, vnto which although I ſometimes encited you, yet knowe that I did ſo by reaſon of her impoꝛtunate requeſtes. But nowe I knowe howe the matter ſtandeth, ſhe ſhall not be able any moꝛe to make me the meſſenger of her diſhoneſties. I am acquainted with ſome of her ſecrets that concerne her nærly, and are ſuch, that if you knewe them, although your father be ſo cruell vnto you, yet would you not leaue to hazard your life foꝛ his honour. I will not ſay any moꝛe, becauſe I knowe you to be ſo wiſe and endued with ſuch diſcretion, that it ſhall not be neceſſarie foꝛ me to vſe many woꝛdes and reaſons in your behalfe. Lexander being aſtoniſhed to heare her talke in this oꝛder, miſdoubted ſome diſhoneſtie of his ſtepmother. But to knowe the truth, and to be thꝛoughly enfoꝛmed, he deſired Sylueria openly to ſhewe him all the matter, and to let him heare what it was that ſhe knewe of Feliſarde her miſtreſſe. At firſt ſhe would be pꝛaied, ſeeming to be vnwilling to diſcloſe a matter ſo ſecret; but at length ſhe declaring that vnto Lexander, which he demanded of her, and which ſhe ſo greatly deſired to tell him, ſtuffed him with a lye moſt notably well foꝛged and contriued. Saying, and conſidering that it is a matter of great weight both vnto your ſelfe and your father Filene in like maner, to knowe that which I knowe: I will moſt plainly declare it vnto you, aſſuring my ſelfe that you will not let any man knowe howe that I haue diſcouered this ſecrete vnto you. You ſhall vnderſtand, that your mother in law Feliſarde hath puꝛpoſed to defile your fathers bed with a certaine ſhepheard, whoſe name I will not tell you, ſeeing it lyeth in you to know him if you pleaſe. Foꝛ if you will come this euening and enter into that place where I will leade you, you ſhall finde the traitreſſe with the adulterer in your fathers houſe: foꝛ they haue ſo appointed it, becauſe that Filene your father doth this night lye abꝛoad, and doth not returne till to moꝛrow about midday, by reaſon of certaine affaires mouing him thereto. Therefoꝛe pꝛepare your ſelfe (if you will follow my counſaile) and about eleuen of the clocke at ni[illegible]

come

come vnto me to our house, where I will bring you to the place, where you may easily do that which you shal think conuenient for the honor and credit of your father; and by means whereof, you may also be reconciled vnto him. Sylueria said all this, dissembling so cunningly, that Lexander resolued to put himselfe in danger to be reuenged of him that sought so folwly to dishonour his father: and thus the traitresse Sylueria, glad that she had so deceiued my husband by the counsell of Felisarde, returned home, to let Felisarde know the effect of her talke with Lexander, and what he appointed to do. The obscure night had not so soone vayled the aire with the curtain of darknesse, but Lexander comming to the village, and taking a dagger which he had gotten by the decease of his vncle Palemon, went iust at eleuen of the clocke at night to his fathers house, where Sylueria expected him, according as they had ordeined. Where was euer such treason scene? Or where such mallice thought? She toke him by the innocent hand, and ascending the staires as softly as they might, she led him to the chamber dore where Filene his father laie, with Felisarde a sleepe: when she had brought him there, she said, Lo Lexander now are you in place where you ought to haue your heart and hand required in such a case. Enter into this chamber, and there you shall finde your stepmother in bed with the adulterer. With that she got away, & retired as swiftly as she could. Lexander being deceiued by that dissembling traitresse, gaue faith to her wordes, and incouraging himselfe drew his pumyard, and hauing thrust open the dore with his foote, entered into the Chamber like a furious man, and being enraged, with a loude voyce vttered these wordes. Traitor, I will presently make thee die; the loues of Filisarde shall but little auaile thee; nay they shall be the cause of thy death and ruine. And so saying, altogither enraged, and not knowing who was in bed with Felisarde his stepmother, lifted vp his hand to clap his weapon into his fathers breast. But as Fortune would haue it, olde Filene knew his son by reason of the light which was in ỹ chamber, & thinking that Lexander purposely

came to kill him, becauſe he had ſo ill vſed him both in woꝛd and déed, ſate vpꝛight in his bed, and croſſing his armes ſpake thus vnto Lexander. Ah my ſonne, what crueltie moueth thée to become the butcher of thy naturall father: Call your iudgement, and enter into your wittes againe, and ſéeke not to ſhed my blood, oꝛ terme my life with ſo tragicall an end. Foꝛ if I haue bene ſomthing rigoꝛous vnto you, and vnnaturally dealt with you being my ſonne, I craue pardõ, intending to become moſt fauourable vnto you euer hereafter. When Lexander perceiued the treaſon of Sylueria, which had almoſt bene cauſe that he had ſlaine his owne father, he fell into ſuch an extaſie, that his foꝛce failed him, and his dagger fell out of his hand without his knowledge. Foꝛ he was ſo amazed of the treaſon which he had committed againſt his father (had not God pꝛouided the contrary) that he could not féele his weapon dꝛopp out of his hand; but altogither troubled and confounded like a man that was bereft of all his ſenſes, went pꝛeſently out of the chamber, and out of his houſe. Fehſarde knowing what ſhould chance that night, watched foꝛ the comming of Lexander, who was no ſoner entred into the chamber, but ſhe leaping out of her bed fled into a moꝛe inward and backe roome, where barring vp the doꝛe, ſhe freed and exempted her ſelfe from the furie and anger of Lexander. But when ſhe ſaw that he was departed, and by reaſon thereof ſhe out of daunger, returning to her bed where Filene laie, trembling at the perill which he had ſo wonderfully eſcaped, ſhe began to ſtir vp her huſband againſt Lexander his ſonne; exclaiming in this maner.

O Filene, now may you ſée what a ſonne you haue, and know that to be moſt true which I ſo often haue admoniſhed you, concerning his euill nature and inclination.

O cruell Lexander! O traytoꝛ Lexander! how commeth it to paſſe that heauen doth not confound thée? why doth not the earth open and ſwallow thée vp into her bowels? why do not the bꝛute beaſtes teare thée to péeces? and why do not men perſecute thée, and puniſh thée accoꝛding to thy heinous

actions.

actions. Accurſed be thy mariage, accurſed be thy diſobeiſance, accurſed be thy loues, and accurſed be thy Iſmenia: ſéeing that ſhe hath enticed thée to execute ſuch a cruell act and abhominable déed. Ah traitor, thou haſt not chaſtiſed the ſhepheard Alanio, who vnto thy great diſhonour and ſhame, hath diſhoneſtly haunted and entertained thy wife Iſmenia, whome ſhe loueth better then thy ſelfe, and yet thou wouldeſt kill & maſſacre thy owne father, who alwaies hath made great account of thy life, honour and credit. Ah vnhappie father! Ah vnfortunate old man! what fault haſt thou committed ſo great, as to be ſlaine and murthered by thy ſonne? by him whom thou haſt engendred? whom thou haſt brought vp and nouriſhed? And for whom thou haſt ſuffered a thouſand troubles? Now therfore take heart, ceaſe hencefoorth to beare him any more loue or affection; commit him to the rigor of the law, that he may be puniſhed as he hath deſerued. For if he that hath committed ſo execrable an offence eſcape due puniſhment, euerie diſobedient child will be emboldened and vnfearfull, and thine at length will in good earneſt laie handes on thée to ſhorten the courſe of thy odious life.

Sorrowfull and troubled Filene, altogither amazed and fearfull, hearing his wiues voice, and weighing the horrible treaſon which his ſonne had thought to commit vpon his perſon, became ſo angry, that taking vp the dagger which Lexander (as I told you) had let fall out of his hand, went forth aſſone as the day appeared, to aſſemble the Iuſtices of peace and chiefeſt of the village togither, in the criminall Court, where he with aboundance of teares flowing out of his eyes ſpake vnto them in this maner.

I call God to witneſſe (moſt excellent ſhepheards) that I am ſo grieued with that which I am to declare vnto you, that I greatly feare, leaſt my ſpirite and breath faile me before I haue opened the matter vnto you. Eſpecially ſeeing it is ſuch that I may be eſtéemed moſt cruell, in that I publikely complaine of my ſonne, expounding his miſdéeds and wickedneſſe vnto you: which being ſo ſtraunge, that I know not how it

may be accordingly punished and chastised, I beseech you to see what is conuenient to be done in this case, to prescribe him such and so iust a punishment, that other children may thereby take a manifest example howe to behaue themselues towardes their parentes. Ye know verie well, that I haue nurrished him carefully, and mainteined him as a father ought to doo, brought him vp painfully, taught him and instructed him, and what trouble, paines, and labour I haue had with him, what counsaile I continually haue giuen him, and how mildly I haue rebuked & chastised him in his youth. Now is he sorely against my will, married to the shepheard Ismenia; and because I haue rebuked him therefore, in steede of reuenging himselfe of the shepheard Alanio, who shamefully entertaineth (as all the village knoweth) the said Ismenia his wife, he hath turned his rage against me, intending to murther me. Ye founde meanes the last night to enter into my house, yea into my bed-chamber where I laie & slept with my wife Felisarde, & there with this poynard would haue slain me: and verily had dispatched me, if God of his grace had not taken his force from him, in such sort, that he could not holde the dagger in his hand, but was constrained to let it fall, and so confounded & bereft of his senses, departed without executing his damnable enterprise. And this is it that I had to say, thus is the matter verily passed, as my beloued spouse can better enforme you. But for as much, as I certeinly knowe, that my sonne Lexander hath not taken vpon him to commit such an horrible treason against me his father, vnlesse he had bene counselled and prouoked thereunto by the enticements and allurements of his wife Ismenia, I beseech you to perpend and weigh what ought herein to be done, to the end that my sonne may be punished for his offence, and false Ismenia also, as well for the counsaile which she hath giuen vnto her husband, as for her lightnesse and dishonest loue towards Alanio.

Filene had scarce ended his tale, but the people became

to

ſe murmure and make ſuch a noyſe, that it ſæmed that the whole village ſhould haue preſently ſuncke in the ground; in ſo much that the hearts of all the ſhepheards were troubled, and all conceiued generally mortall hatred againſt Lexander. Some ſaid, that it was pittie he ſhould liue till Phœbus had reached to his Meridian ſeate; others ſaid, that he ought to be caſt into the riuer; others, that it was pittie if he were not burned quicke; and others, that he ought to be committed to the mercie of the cruell and ſauage beaſts: finally, there was no one perſon that was not ſtirred vp againſt him. Beſides, they did likewiſe all maruell of that which Filene falſly alleaged concerning my life; but they were neuertheleſſe all of them ſo amazed at the fact of Lexander, that they did not greatly hearken to the accuſation and impeachment which Filene moſt falſly (by reaſon of Feliſarde his wiues deceitfull ſpeech) had made againſt me.

When Lexander had heard what his father had depoſed againſt him, in the Court of criminall cauſe, in the preſence of the Iuſtices and audience of all the people, he was wonderfully greeued: and beſides, when he vnderſtood what his father had ſaid againſt me, he conceiued ſuch exceeding ſorrow, that it paſſeth my abilitie to expreſſe the ſame. And thence commeth all my greefe, thence take my cuill it offspring, that was the cauſe and beginning of all my labours, trauell, paine, and ſorrowes. For my deare husband Lexander, remembring that in times paſt I did loue, & was loued of Alanio, and that loue forgotten and dead, oftentimes may be renued and reuiued againe: becauſe he ſaw that the ſhepheard Alanio (whome I could not abide to ſee, & whom I abhorred for Lexanders ſake) was yet amourous of me, daily ſhewing me ſuch curtiſies and importunate cheriſhments, he thought verily, and perſwaded himſelfe that all was moſt certeine and true which his father had ſpoken of me in the face of the world. In ſuch maner, that he diſpairing as well for the treaſon committed vnto him by traitreſſe Syluenia, as for the ſuſpition which he conceiued of [illegible] departed incontinently from the village: ſince which time

he

he was neuer ſéene there, nor any newes brought what is become of him. And as I knew that he was departed, and the cauſe wherefore, by report of certaine ſhepheards his friends, (vnto whom he had rehearſed the whole matter,) I likewiſe left the village to ſéeke him, and intend not to reſt any where vntill I finde my ſwéete ſpouſe, to the ende that I may excuſe and cleare my ſelfe vnto him of that fault which is falſly imputed to me, and which he ſuſpecteth to be moſt true. It is long ſince I haue wandred vp and downe throughe the worlde to ſéeke my husband, and although I haue ſought him and enquired for him in moſt places, and eſpecially all the chiefeſt and principall farmes, houſes, villages, and boroughs of the country, yet can I not heare any thing of him. The beſt aduenture that I haue had in this my endeleſſe voyage, was, that two daies after I departed from our village, in a certaine vally, I met the traitreſſe Sylueria, who hauing heard of the voluntarie exile and banishment of my husband Lexander, went after him to diſcouer her treaſon vnto him, repenting that ſhe had ſo highly offended him. But ſhe had not as yet found him: and aſſoone as ſhe ſaw me, ſhe approched neare me, and falling flat on her face, cried me mercy, and at my will, riſing, ſhe opened the whole matter vnto me. Whereof I was not a little glad, thereby vnderſtanding how that abhominable treaſon was practiſed againſt vs. And although I was but a weake woman, yet I could haue vnlaced the traitreſſe members, & teared her to péece-meale with mine owne hands, yet I withheld my ſelfe, becauſe ſhe onely could remedie my harme, by reporting her owne miſchiefe. I willed her diligently to ſéeke my beloued Lexander, and to giue him notice how all the matter was paſſed: and therewith on the ſuddein, I left her going one way, and I came another, to the end that either of vs might finde him.

Thus gentle ſhepheard, haue you heard the plaine & true rehearſall of all my miſeries and calamities. And for as much as Phœbus is not yet drowſie or ſléepie, nor like to reach to his Weſterne bed ſo ſoone: if in like maner you (as I hav ...

will

will take pleasure in reporting the cause and offspring of your wandring errors, I doubt not but we shall reach to the place (where I hope we shall rest this night) by that time that you haue added the conclusion to your narration. Alasse (quoth Perierio) the conclusion must nedes follow quickly, where the narration is soner ended then begun. For all the specialitie that I can vse in declaring the cause of my miserie, is this general rule, that I know that I am most miserable. For I loue, but whom, I know not: and that is all I can say concerning my selfe.

Perierio had scarce ended his wordes, but Ismenia made sign that he shuld harken to a certain voice which she thought to haue heard in the woods; for there was a Gentlewoman in the habit of a shepheard not farre from the place where they were, which thus complained of her mishap.

Ah Fortune, haue I thus long had thee in estimation and yelded thee such honour; and doest thou reward me with continuall and neuer ceasing trauel? Ah vnthankful and ingratefull goddesse! If a goddes. For gods are iust, constant, mercifull; Thou inconstant, cruell, and most vniust: By the rule of contraries, therefore art thou no goddesse. Ah foolish wench be wise at last being taught by experience, and in stead of worshipping Fortune, curse her, detest her, and defie her; and perswade thy selfe, that the gods which are iealous and therefore wrathfull, and incensed with anger against those that depriue them of the honour due vnto them, & giue it vnto others, haue throwne thee into this Charybdis of miseries, to punish and chastice thy hainous offence committed against them in worshipping that Idoll Fortune. Wherefore O heauenly powers, Grisilla bendeth her knees and foldeth her handes, asking pardon of heauen for her errour. She repenteth her of her ignorance, she bewaileth her folly. Pardon mercifull gods, pardon me, and cease to worke your vengeance vpon a poore distressed virgine, that desolate and bereft of all hope and consolation, pleadeth for mercy from heauen. And with that she wept so bitterly, that Ismenio and Perierio comming vnto her could

not see her face, it was so vailed with teares. Likewise she pulled her golden haire, by whole lockes off her head with her hands, which were so white and so delicately fashioned, that it was a maruell to see such tender hands so cruelly praie vppon so braue a head. Ismenia therfore not able to behold such an vnmercifull spectacle, stepped vnto her and held her hands, which so furiously teared her glistring haire, saying. Ah distressed shepheard, seeke not your owne ruine, wrong not your selfe, and fight not against your owne person. For the torment and griefe which you suffer by reason of your misfortune, is augmented and enlarged, not diminished or slacked by these meanes.

Therefore (faire shepheard) hold your handes, and cease from hering your selfe. You liue not alone in aduersitie; for we are not so happie but that we may worthilie complaine of Fortunes fickleneſſe. Company in misery is no small solace, comfort your selfe therefore, and with vs hope, that the Gods will at last be moued to mercy, and appoint the end of our miseries. Ah gentle shepheard (answered Grisilla, for ỹ was her name) where dispaire ruleth, there hope is banished. Nay (quoth Perierio) Embrace hope, and dispaire dareth not approach. The extremitie of my case (replied Grisilla) forbiddeth me to take hold of hope. Yea but through magnanimitie & courage (quoth Perierio) may you ouercome & vanquish your extremitie. And therefore (sweete shepheard) let not your heart faint, nor your courage slacken, but with an inuincible hart suffer not any extremitie though neuer so supreme, to braue your minde. And though you be conquered of all your enemies, yet yeld not to the libertie of thy mind, the proudest champiõ that either Fortune or fate can arme against you.

Grisilla marking that both Perierio & Ismenia were persons of estimatiõ, thought them to be some of the chiefest shepheards therabout; & therfore assone as she could cõtain from weeping, thanked thẽ for their cõfortable persuasions. For she receiued great consolation in that she had met with them, taking great delight in beholding their beautie: and asking them whither they

they trauelled, Ismenia tolde her, that she with Perierio were bound toward the temple of Diana, hoping that the Lady President of the same temple would remedie their harme, & giue them such instruction, that they should haue cause to hope for ỹ end of their troubles in short time. Crisilla hearing that, was passing glad, & began to cleare her eies from the water which continually ran downe her face. And hauing chased away such impediments as hindred her speech, by reason of her sorow, she spake to Perierio & Ismenia, with such an excellent grace, that her words seemed to flow from her mouth, as running water issueth out of the fountaine. Insomuch that they did not doubt, but that she was some courtly Princesse, though she couered her bodie with ỹ vesture of a country lasse. After they had had some talke of each others Fortunes & troubles, Grisilla at the request of Perierio & Ismenia, began to vnfold the cause of her trauell, making a copious and large narration of the course of all her life. Permitting this *Exordium*.

Louing shepheards, though I feare that I shall not be able to accomplish that accordingly, which I haue vndertaken to do, mistrusting that I shall both lacke time to ende the historie of my life, when I haue begun it, and also discretion to contriue the same into some order or methode, my memorie being weake; by reason whereof, I may chance to forget and slip ouer many things, yet hoping that you will accept of my good will and readinesse in pleasuring you, I wil endeuour as neere as I can, and as truly as my memorie will permit, to report and laie downe the whole circumstance of my case vnto you.

I was borne in the famous Ile of Albion, where my father was generall commander ouer all the Kings Forces abroad, when the King was at home. And if his maiestie chanced to follow the campe in his proper person, then was my father Viceroy, & supreme gouernor at home. I had not liued fiue yeeres, but my father venturing himselfe in the midst of his enemyes, and preasing into the verie bowelles of their

Campe, slew the King of *Gaule* with his owne hand, and therwith gaue the enemy a terrible ouerthrow, and his King a great victorie: but it cost him his life. For after he had slaine the King, there were so many Knightes that besought him to reuenge the death of their King, that he was not able to escape the houre which his destinies had appointed him.

When the King was informed how that my father had obteined him such a wonderfull victorie with the price of his life, knew not whether he had greater cause to reioyce for the ouerthrow of his enimy, or to weep for the losse of such a valiant souldier, and faithfull subiect. Whereupon he in proper person came to my fathers Pallace, and himselfe brought my mother the newes of my fathers honourable death, comforting vs all with such friendly spæches, that we could not haue bene grieued for his death, if Nature had not forced vs to lament his losse. Yet howsoeuer we were græued, the King cauled my father to be buried most honourably, and erected such a magnificent tombe at his owne cost, that he gaue a sufficient token to all his country, how greatly he estéemed of Duke Florindor (for so was he called.) Within foure yeares after, my mother the Duches, being an aged woman died, and was buried vnder the same tombe with my father. And the King considering that I was yong (about ten yéeres of age) and that I was onely heire to the Dukedome; to the end that I might be carefully brought vp and well loked vnto, he caused me to be brought to the Court, where I waighted on the Quéene, who made as great account of me as if I had bene her daughter. And to the ende that I might perceiue the loue and affection she and her husband the King did beare me, I was honoured with the tytle of a Duches, & disposer of all my fathers signories, & Lordships, yea and of the Dukedome also, at mine owne pleasure: neither did the King withhold from me any part of the reuenewes thereof. So that I liued in as great ioy as any mortall mayd might: for I wanted nothing that I was able to thinke of. I was loued and fauoured both of the King and Quéen, and therefore honoured of all the country. But alacke, this my felicitie

licitie was too great to be perpetuall; and I was seated too high to escape the stormy blasts of aduersitie. The tall Oakes are shaken with the windes, & the climing steeples rent with the thunder clap, where the low brambles feele not the furie of the winde, nor the base cottage the force of the storme. The toppes of high mountains are chopped through Apollos heat, where the lowe plaines and greene medowes are beautified with floures, and being cherished with Phœbus raies, produce sweete hearbes, and yeeld foode to the shepheards flockes. And so poore Grisilla lifted vp to high estate, triumphing in Court, and glorying in her happinesse; is brought in this most miserable torment, where as many simple maydes and countrey wenches enioy swéet content, and passe their liues in supreme pleasure. You shall therefore vnderstand (louing shepheards) that I being fiftéen yéeres of age, or therabout, the yong prince was sent for by the king from the Vniuersitie; for the quéene had purposed to marry me vnto him. Who being about eight or ten moneths yonger then my selfe, was thought too yong to be married so soone; but the quéene fearing least some one or other (for there were many noble mens sons of great houses and high descent in the Court) should winne my heart and loue, vsed the matter so, that few or none could haue my company but her sonne, whom she wished to be matched with none but my selfe. And in truth by reason of our daily conuersation, at length grew such familiaritie and acquaintance betweene Periander and me, that loue créeping into our hearts united vs together, and of two bodies made but one heart, one will, one desire, one pleasure, and one minde. In so much that the quéene, yea and all Court, began to perceiue the affection that we did beare one to an other. Suppose (shepheards) what a pleasure it was both to the king, his wife, and most of all the noble men of the realme, yea generally to all men in the country, to see such likelihood of a marriage which they so earnestly wished and grædily desired. And by that time that Periander had reathed to the age of eightéene yeares, the king fearing least delaie might bréed daunger, and my affection to change,

or his sonnes mind after, called vs both into his chamber, and in presence of the Quéene his wife, spake vnto vs after this maner, intending to trie our constancie.

Maruell not my sonne Periander, nor you yong Duches, that I haue sent for you hither, for I will not kéepe close the cause therof. Know therfore that my pleasure is, that you Periander loue not Lady Grisil any longer; Haue I sent for you frõ the Vniuersitie, to court your mothers mayds? Did I call you to the Court to learn how to play Mars in the field, and do you take vpon you so yong, to serue Venus in the chamber? You are but a boy yet Periander, & therefore vnfit for loue. And you Ladie Grisilla, haue we shewed you such friendly entertainment in the Court, and honoured you with such an high estate, to allure our sonne to fancie you, where I purposed to marry him to the King of *Portugals* eldest daughter, and heire apparant to the Crowne of *Portugall*? Thy father the deceased Duke, was a man of great desert, but his daughter not so worthie as to become a Quéene. Be contented with the title of a Duches Ladie Grisil, and reach not to so high a bough as a Crown; for thou maist both misse of thy purpose, and incurre danger to lose their fauour, in whom consisteth your welfare. Therfore I exhort you both, to leaue these familiar métings, these louely *Sonnes*, which you giue one another in the morning, & curtuous good nights you bid one another in ỹ euening; also those pleasant smiles, passionate lookes, & continuall winkes wherwith you fauour one another, will I haue you not to vse any longer. And to be short, I forbid you to vse company one with ỹ other any more. Periander hearing his father concluded so peremptory against his blisse, answered. Then father, my Lord & soueraigne, if it please your maiesty to separate me from the conuersation of Duches Grisil, I beséech you to giue me leaue to separate my self from the company of al men. And with that he drew his dagger & would haue wounded his louing hart with the sharp point therof, had not his mother the Quéene hindred his intent, holding his arme. As for me, I was so perplexed both at the Kings words & his rashnesse, ỹ I fel on the ground

in

in such maner, that ỹ King himself thinking ỹ I had bin dead, ran from his chaire of estate, and lifted me from the grounde calling Lady Grisil, speake, speake Lady Grisil, yong Quéen of *Albion*; speak but one word. But I lay in ỹ extasie a good houre. All which time, the King, the Quéne, and all that were présent, (but especially Periander) were so grœued ỹ none of them could abstaine from wæping. The King called, the Quéne hallowed in mine eares, with a lamentable voice, and Periander almost breathlesse, being choaked with excéding sorrow which he conceiued, could neither call, nor cry. At length with much ado, I came to my self, & stood vpright, to ỹ ioy of all those that had heard of my mischance. Wherupon the King told vs that he had vsed his former words, but to learne whether our loue was firme; intending if I liked of Periander, and Periander of me, as of man & wife, to marry vs togither. To be short, before we departed from the king, he sent for some of his chéefest noble men, & in their presence, Periander made promise neuer to marry other woman then my selfe; & in like maner affirmed, that I was content to haue him to my husband, & wold die rather then be married to any other. So that our marriage was presently concluded, & the wedding to be a month after.

Imagine louing shepheards, what ioy there was through the country, when it was reported that the yong Prince and the yong Duches were promised, and should be maried within the space of one month? Consider also, how happie and blessed that Periander and I thought our selues to be, when we had obteined that with the King and Quéenes consent & good will, which we feared that they would neuer haue graunted? But enuy the sorest enemy that wageth warre against content, sone made a breach of our felicitie, into a wofull and pitifull mishap.

For there was a yong Knight in the Court called sir Massicourt, being sonne to the Earle Doralter, who was so in loue with me (though he had not as yet declared it vnto me) that for me he had willingly made exchaunge of all ỹ he had. This sir Massi. hauing heard of ỹ cõtract betwœn vs, took it so heuily, ỹ he almost

almost dispaired. But considering that griefe or sorrow could not preuaile to remedie his harme, toke courage, and hoped to finde meanes by subtiltie and craft to hinder the mariage, which he practised with all spéede. The Earle his father was Admirall of the sea, by meanes wherof, this yong knight had great acquaintance with diuerse Captaines of the shippes of warre, and other Pilots and shippe maisters. Among whom he had one especially bounde vnto him named Barsalis, whose seruice he durst imploy in the waigytiest matter of the world, and vnto whom he might haue communicated the chéefest secrets he had.

To be short, he sent for this Barsalis and told him, that if euer he would requite the curtesies and friendship which he had receiued of him, that now the time was come, and occasion offered, wherein he might shew the thankfulnesse and gratefulnesse of his minde. The Captaine Pilot answered, that he wished not for any better houre then that in which he might be imployed in his seruice, protesting, that whatsoeuer hee wold haue him do, he shuld find him most readie to execute his pleasure, were it right or not, so it consisted in his power: being readie to hazard his life to do him seruice. Whereupon sir Massicourt desired him to cause a ship to be well rigged & furnished with prouision, & to laie Anchor at the hauen of *Douer*, where he should expect his comming, and then he should further vnderstand his pleasure. Which Barsalis promised to doe, though he wist not why, nor to what end. For sir Massicourt being something polliticke, and considering that mens minds are fickle, and subiect to alteration, would not as yet disclose his intent vnto the Pilot, fearing least he might haue bene moued to bewray him before the time y he purposed to execute his treason. But after he had charged the Pilot to expect his comming to the hauen of *Douer*, he sought occasion to talke with the yong Prince assone as he might. And the next morning hauing heard that Periander intended to ride a hunting, prepared himselfe, to mæte the Prince as he roade towardes the parke. Periander glad of his company (for there was great

fami-

familiaritie betwéene them, and sir Massicourt was wonderfully well beloued of him, began to be mery with him, and to talke with him according to his accustomed maner. At length sir Massicourt taking occasion to speake of the sea, I remember (quoth he) that your grace oftentimes hath bene earnest with me to goe to sea, and to sée what rule Neptune kéepeth in his kingdome. The weather is now most pleasant for that purpose; in so much that if it will please your grace now to recreate your selfe in beholding such pleasure as the calme sea can yéeld, I am readie to accompany your grace to *Douer*, where I haue a most gallant Pinnace, as excellent and fit for our turne as any vessell in all the realme. Periander thanked him, and appointed to ride with him the next morrow towards the hauen. Assone as he came to the Court, he told vs that he had purposed to go to sea, and asked me whether I would giue him leaue to be away fiue or sixe dayes. And although I was verie sorie and vnwilling that he should go, fearing least any mischance might happen vnto him, yet séeing he so desired to go, I séemed to be more willing then I was, least he should be gréeued and leaue his pleasure for feare of displeasing me.

The next morning sir Massicourt being come, their fast broken, & their horse readie, they rode merily from the court; but alasse I was not without cause discomforted, neither did I forecast such daunger as happened in vaine. For the traytor Massicourt, assone as the Prince was aboord the Pinnace, called the Pylot Barsalis aside, and gaue him certaine cheines of gold and other sumptuous iewels, mounting to the value of ten thousand crownes, promising him a farre better reward. And this is it I request at your hands (quoth he,) that when we be on the sea (séeing the wind serueth for *Spaine*) you should saile into the Spanish sea, and being there, on the sodeine laie hold on the Prince, and my selfe also, as if you were enraged against vs, and sought to spoyle vs both of our liues. That done, you shall hide me into some odde corner of the shippe, where the Prince shall not be able to sée me, and make him beléeue that you haue cast me into the sea; and then arriuing at

ſome Spaniſh hauen, ſell him to the Moꝛes that haue the gouernment of the Gallyes, to be a Gally ſlaue; but firſt put off his cloathes, and apparell him as if he were one of the ſhippe boyes. Then ſhal we be rid of him, and he neuer like to eſcape out of their hands. Barſalis pꝛomiſed to do all this, and perfoꝛmed no leſſe indéed. Foꝛ Periander was ſold vnto the Gally ſlaues, ſir Maſſicourt trauelled into *Spaine* and *Italy*, and Barſalis vpon a certaine night, ſet his Pinnace on fire, and burned all his Marriners, ſauing himſelfe in a ſhippe boate, and in a Marchants he returned to *Albion*. Whither being arriued, he came pꝛeſently to the Courte, and bꝛought vs newes of thoſe that we ſo long had wiſhed to heare of. Foꝛ they had bin away ten moneths, and though the King had ſent out diuerſe ſhippes, and the Admirall himſelfe alſo courſed thꝛough the ſeas, yet could we heare nothing either of the Kings oꝛ Admirals ſonne. Whereby we ſuppoſed that they were dead, though we hoped the contrary. But Barſalis that traiterous Pylot told vs, that aſſone as they had entred the mouth of the ſea, the winde roſe, and ſuch a tempeſt was ſpꝛead ouer all the ſea, that the Pinnace being beaten with the waues on euerie ſide, rent in pæces and ſuncke pꝛeſently. All that he could ſaie of Periander and Maſſicourt, was, that he ſaw them both togither leape out of the Pinnace, and that the Knight with a ſmall maſt in his hands ſwome vp and downe whither the ſtreame dꝛoue him, caſting himſelfe vpon one of the hatches, toſſed vp and downe the waues. All the reſt that were in the ſhippe, he ſaid that they ſunke with the Pinnace, and himſelfe eſcaped alone in the ſhip boat. This traitoꝛ Barſalis receiued no ſmall gift of the King and of me, (although his newes was ſo euill,) becauſe he told vs that he ſaw the pꝛince fléeting vp and downe the waues, vpon one of the ſhippe hatches; hoping that he was ſome where caſt on lande, though perhaps ſo farre that he could not ſo ſone returne home to *Albion*. I will not here make mention what a liuing death, oꝛ dying life, I poꝛe wꝛetch ledde, all the while that Periander was abſent, ſometimes perſwading my ſelfe that he was

dead,

dead,and ſometimes hoping to ſée him and enioy his preſence; but this I will leaue to your diſcretion (louing ſhepheards,) and paſſe on forwardes in the declaration of this lamentable hiſtorie. You ſhall therefore knowe, that after Barſalis had bene ſixe moneths at home, the Admirals ſonne returned to his fathers houſe attired like a ſhippe ſlaue, and told vs ſuch a tale of his wonderfull aduenture, how he was caſt on the ſhoare ſide with his maſte péece, and how he fared on the lande, that not the Courte onely, but all the countrey alſo admired at his harde Fortune. But concerning the Prince, he could tell no more then the other traytour had done, yet to giue a colour of likelyhood, he agreed to the ſame report which the villaine Barſalis had made. And though my hope was ſmall, yet I tooke the greater courage, becauſe ſir Maſſicourt that Arch-traytour had eſcaped ſuch dangers and troubles as he made vs beléeue. And how ſoeuer my yong heart ſtriued againſt ſorrowe and gréefe, yet the Quéene being olde and weake of nature, conſumed for verie gréefe, and dyed. Who being buried and intombed, what mourning, what gréefe, and what ſorrowe was made, not in the Court onely, but generally ouer all the Countrey, I am not able to expreſſe. And as for my ſelfe, though I was verie ſorie for her death, yet was the gréefe and paine which I ſuffered for the abſence of Periander, ſo great and exceéding, that I could ſcarce thinke vppon any other thing, and therefore the ſoner forgate the death of the Quéene.

By this time beganne the traytour Maſſicourt to make loue vnto me, and to caſt ſuch paſſionate lookes vppon me at all times that hee paſſed by me, or came into the place where I was; that I could not chooſe but perceiue that he was become darling to Venus,by the forcing dart of her ſonne Cupid,and that he ſuffered great paine for my ſake.

I was ſorrie for his caſe, becauſe he was a moſt gallant gentleman,exceéding both in perfection of body and readineſſe of witte, but yet my heart was ſo fixed on Periander, that although I had certainly knowne y he was dead,yet could I not

haue forgotten him to loue any other. Yet howſoeuer I was affected, Maſſicourt found meanes to enter into the Orcheard I being there alone, and emboldned himſelfe ſo farre, that he came vnto me, greeted me, and with all humilitie, by word of mouth declared what torment he ſuffered for loue of me, deſiring me to be mercifull vnto him. Whereunto I anſwered, that I could ſhewe him mercy in pittying his caſe, and exhorting him to chaunge his minde; but other mercie I could not ſhew him. And ſo I flung into the pallace and left him among the trées, which might haue bene witneſſes of the teares he ſhead. Yet he gaue not ouer the field for all he had had but ill ſucceſſe at the firſt aſſault, and purpoſed to ſend me a Letter, hoping that incke and paper would doe more then his bare words had done. Eſpecially becauſe he being paſſionate, was not able in my preſence to expreſſe his minde, neither would I hearken vnto his ſpéech. In ſo much that he thinking that I could not do leſſe then reade all whatſoeuer he wrote, though I could not giue eare to his ſayings; diſpatched a Letter and conueyed it into my hands as ſecretly as he could: which Letter was written to ſuch end.

Maſſicourt to the Duches Griſil.

PArdon me gracious Ladie, if I am troubleſome vnto your grace, for I am forced by that Lord whom I muſt obey. The ſumme of my deſire is to pleaſe your grace, and my chiefe felicitie conſiſteth in your content, therefore thinke not Lady that I would willingly moleſt you. My humble petition is, that it may pleaſe your grace, to weigh the torment, griefe and paine, which I ſuffer, which if your gracious mercie doe not ſlacken, is like to ſeale my loue with death, and to giue the worlde cauſe to accuſe your grace of crueltie. Mercie, Madame, is an ornament to Ladies of high eſtate. I wiſh not that you ſhould forget the Prince *Periander*, but to admit mee as cõpartner & partaker of your griefe. Neither do I craue that your grace ſhould not loue *Periander* (whether he be dead or yet liue) but giue me

leaue

leaue to loue you, and to accept of my loue as a comfort to assuage the sorrow you suffer for *Periander*. Farewell.

When I had read this Letter, I could not but be angrie: for it greeued me that he went about to withdrawe me from the loue of Periander, though he seemed to wish the contrarie. For how could I haue loued him, and not forget Periander? How could I haue bene mery with him, and mourne for Periander? And how could I laugh with him, and weepe for Periander? Wherfore incontinently, I wrote him this answere.

Grisilla to sir Massicourt.

YOur conscience vrged you (sir *Massicourt*) to craue pardon in the beginning of your Letter, foreknowing your offence. But your excuse is, for that you are constrained by him whom you must obey. *Cupid* you mean, I am sure: But how shamefull it is that a Knight should so bewraie his pusilanimitie and faintnesse of courage, I leaue to your owne consideration. And to let you vnderstand furthermore, that if your desire be to please me, and therfore farre from vndertaking any thing that may trouble me, you shall obteine your wish, & enioy true felicitie (which you affirme to consist in my content) if you molest me neither with Letter nor speech, to loue you. For in so doing, you shall binde mee to acknowledge that you haue done me a singular pleasure. You know that I haue alreadie told you that I am sory for your torment & passion; though I may not be your phisitian. Neither do I thinke the world so mad, as to iudge me cruell, if your folly cause you to die. (Thogh it be bee a common and vsuall custome vnto all your sexe, to talke of the mate before you haue the checke). You can teach me that mercie beseemeth maides, but you forget in the meane time, that Knights ought not to be vnmercifull as to seeke the ouerthow of our honestie, and to spoile vs of our honor. Haue not I giuen faith to loue but *Periander*, and shall I not incurre foule shame and dishonour, if contrarie to my promise I loue

you? But you would haue mee to vſe your loue as a paſtime to forget the dolour which otherwiſe I ſhould ſuffer for the abſence of *Periander*. How farre do you runne beyond reaſon? For I will haue you know, that ſuch loue as you talke of, yea the verie memorie thereof only, ſhould be a whetſtone to ſharpen my griefe, ſeeing that there is nothing more painfull or odious vnto mee, then that which draweth my minde from thinking on *Periander*, & incombreth my thoughts with matters, taking away the remembrance of *Periander*: thinking no time ill ſpent, but that wherein I ſhead not teares for *Periander*. Therefore ceaſe to moleſt me, ſeeing the ſumme of your delight conſiſteth in pleaſing me.

After Maſſicourt had receiued this Letter, he durſt not ſo often moleſt me. Neuertheleſſe, of purpoſe he came diuerſe times to the court, prealling nere the priuie chamber, to haue occaſion to ſpeake with me; but I could watch him, as well to ſhun him, as he could watch me to talke with me. In ſo much, that ſithens I wrote him that Letter, I ſpake with him but once, at which time I ſo ſharply rebuked his importunitie (ſeeing that no milde or curteous ſpeeches could ſerue) that a long time he abſented himſelfe from the court. At length (when as I thought ſurely that I had bene altogither rid of ſuch a troubleſome ſuitor, on the ſodain he greeted me, as I was going to the Queene on a certain morning, being but newly riſen. And although I was alone, yet I was ſo angry, that I turned my face from him, and would not ſpeake vnto him. This happened to my remembrance twiſe or thriſe. After which time I ſaw him no more. But about three weekes after, a little caſket couered with a cloth of gold, was brought me, whereon there was written this inſcription in golden letters.

My ſupreme will and pleaſure is, that this be giuen to Ducſſes *Griſil*.

I marueiling what that meant, aſked the meſſenger, who ſent it, or to what ende? who anſwered, that he that ſer-

it is not nowe; but liuing, was called Sir Massicourt. Who being in his chamber (quoth the messenger) this morning, willed me to go into the next roome til he called me, and that I should presently carry the casket which I should finde vpon the table to Duches Grisil: when I had staied there three or foure houres, I maruelled what my maister did there so lõg alone, and peeping through the crease of the chamber doore, I saw him lie breathlesse on the grounde, & so amazed, I stepped in and found this casket standing by him, what is in it I know not. And so the messenger being sir Massicourts chamberlaine, departed. I opening the casket, found a dagger all bloodie, on the blade whereof, was this message engrauen in such small letters that I could scarce read it.

Go tell the Queene, that in my heart inthron'd,
Doth swaie the scepter of my hautie minde,
That thou hast pierc'd the seate whereon she sate,
And ouercome the kingdome which she rul'd:
That thou hast massacred that *Massicourt*,
Whereouer she so proudly tyranniz'd:
That thou hast drowned all his thoughts in blood,
Who loued her as neuer wight was lou'd:
That thou hast rid him from her cruell face,
Who prais'd her beautie to the souereigne skies;
That thou hast sent him to the groues of hell,
That deem'd his heauen consisted in her grace:
That thou hast ended his exceeding paine,
Whose griefe her mercy would not mittigate:
And that thou hast his torment finished,
Whom she(for cruell)caused to dispaire.
This do, and let the colour of thy cote,
Giue to the butcher of my death a note.

In what case I was (louing shepheards) after I had read that message, and bene informed of that rufull tragedie, I wil not now declare.

For the sorow which I conceiued for the ende of Massicourt,

was incredible. Besides, what a suddaine rumour was spread through the Court of his death, you may consider, in so much that I need not to stand vpon that point. But I will passe on to ỹ rest of my misery. For within three or foure months after the decease of sir Massicourt, I got a stronger enemy to my content then Massicourt; for the King himselfe (though he was aboue fiftie yeares of age) solicited me to giue ouer all remembrance of his sonne, and to yeeld to his request, which was to become his wife, and be crowned with the diademe of *Albion*. Yet could not that precious obiect alter the mind of Grisil, or any whit in her diminish the memorie of Periander. But the King knowing that he might command, when he perceiued that I could not be induced by praiers, faire words, loftie promises, and other allurements to graunt his sute, some vsed the tyrannous sentence of all those that may doe what they will.

Sic volo, sic iubeo, stat pro ratione voluntas.

And thought to trie whether he could by threatnings and menaces, obteine that, which by faire meanes I would not consent vnto. But all could not helpe: for except death onely, nothing could take from me the faith and promise which I made to Periander. And whilest the King & I thus stroue, he in louing, & I in hating, a Letter was brought vnto the court from King of *Spaine*, wherin he enformed the King, that his sonne Periander was with him, intending to be in *Albion* with his father and louing Grisil, verie shortly. But that he had sent a messenger before his comming, that they should be enformed of his health and Fortune, could scarce belieue it: but that they sawe it was manifest, seeing the Prince Periander had written that Massicourt was by the Pylot Barsalis cast ouerbord, and yet notwithstanding he complained not of Barsalis, but agreed with him in the report of the tempest, which was none. Besides, ỹ loue which he bore me was sufficient proofe of his treason. For he sent vs the whole declation of the treason practised by Barsalis against him. He also informed vs how he

he had heard of the Quéene his mothers death, whereof he was verie sorie. The King hauing receiued these Letters, at the first was glad that his sonne was liuing, and caused Barsalis to be apprehended, who with a little racking confessed the whole matter, and appeached the Admirals sonne that was dead, as the authour & cause of all that he had executed. Wherat the whole world so maruelled, that they could scarce beléeue it. And whereas many had pitied the knights lamentable and tragicall end, now they iudged him rewarded according to his deserts. And I for my part, was so enraged against him, that if he had yet liued, I beléeue I had with mine owne handes wrong his head from his shoulders: for he was the cause of all my calamitie. The King caused Barsalis to be hanged and quartered, and in the place where Massicourt that politicke traytor was buried, did he command a gibbet to be set vp, reaching ouer his tombe. And this written on ỹ top of it in great Letters.

Here lieth entomb'd, a Knight of auncient fame,
An Earles sonne, sir *Massicourt* by name.
This Knight for loue and heinous treason tri'd,
Yet could not helpe, he pierc'd his heart and di'd.
He was no traytor knowne, till clad in claie,
This gibbet here, was set it to bewraie.

For the King was terribly enraged, when he had heard this straunge kinde of treason; which was the cause that now he loued her whom he had wedded to his sonne, and hated him whom he was by Nature bound to loue.
For least Periander should return into *Albion* and marry with me, whom he would haue to be his wife, the King forgetting both the law of Nature and honestie, wrote vnto the King of *Spaine*, that his sonne Periander was guilty of treason against his owne person, being his father: and therefore desired him vpon all friendship, and the alliance that had a long time bene betwéene the kingdomes of *Spaine* & *Albion*, to kéepe his sonne

cloſe priſoner, and to let him be vſed as hardly as any of all the other Captiues which were in his kingdome or dominions.

When I had heard what anſwer the king had returned by the Embaſſadors of *Spaine*, my hart was ready to burſt. And I was minded diuerſe times to diſpatch my ſelfe with one of my garters; thinking that by my death I ſhould deliuer Periander from impriſonment, and moue the kinges minde to vſe his ſonne as hee ought to doe. But I knowe not howe, I was alwayes ſo falſly allured with hope, that I continually abſtained from ſhortening my life, and thereby prolonged my miſerie. You ſhall therefore vnderſtand, that I got one of the Embaſſadours Pages to carrie me a Letter vnto Periander, and to deliuer it ſecretly into his owne handes. Which the youth promiſed that he would accompliſh though it ſhould coſt him his life; and to reward his readineſſe, and to make him the willinger and carefuller to diſcharge his duetie, I gaue him twentie crownes to drinke withall. The Letter was written to this effect.

Briſilla to the Prince Periander.

SWeete *Periander*, the ioye which poore *Briſil* conceiued when ſhe heard of her *Periander*, was too great to be of long continuance, and euen as the hearbe that groweth and fadeth in one houre, ſo the mirth that poſſeſſed my ſoule, was in a moment expelled and baniſhed. You accuſed the Pylot *Barſalis*, but you might rather haue curſed the traytour *Maſſicourt* as the chiefe cauſe and firſt beginning of all our ſorrowes. For the furious loue, hypocriticall friendſhip and malicious pollicie of that vnhappie Knight, hath wrought firſt his owne ruine, and therewith our aduerſitie. How miſerable and vnhappie art thou *Periander*, that thy owne naturall father hateth thee? How vnfortunate, that thy parent conſpireth againſt thee? And how vnluckie, that he who ought to be thy chiefe friend, is become

thy

thy enemie? Nay rather, how wretched is diſtreſſed *Briſil*, that vnhappy *Periander* muſt be thus miſerable, vnfortunate, & vnluckie for her ſake? Ah *Periander*, could my captiuitie ſet thee at libertie? how pleaſantly, and how willingly ſhould the world ſee me runne to the priſon, and yeelde my legge to the ſtocks or yron giues? Nay might the deareſt blood that ſuccoureth my faithfull heart, raunſome thee from impriſonment, and obtaine thee thy ſoules deſire, how ſoone ſhould my breaſt offer it ſelfe to my knife to be ſet abroch, and to haue a paſſage made vnto the inmoſt part thereof? But no, the Gods and Fortune enuie at mee too greatly, to ſuffer me to enioy ſuch great happineſſe. If no man can or dare tell you the cauſe of your fathers ſuddaine wrath againſt you, know, that I haue found meanes to reſolue you of that doubt, and to let you vnderſtand, that accurſed *Briſil* is the onely occaſion thereof, though ſhe had rather die, then liue to ſee thee wronged. The King thy father will be married to *Briſil*, and therfore muſt *Periander* be baniſhed, and (which is more) impriſoned among ſtraungers farre from home. But aſſure thy ſelfe *Periander*, that I will rather die, then vndo that which is knitted with my faith, and bound with my honor. If you can patiently endure your impriſonment, perſuade your ſelfe that I will couragiouſly abide my martyrdome. Which for that as it cannot but be the crowne of mine honour, ſo alſo is like to be the cauſe of thy releaſement: I wiſh that it may happen with all ſpeed. That *Briſil* being lifeleſſe and forgotten, *Periander* may be reconciled to his father, returne to his country, and enioy his pleaſure vntill the deceaſe of the King, then to be crowned with the glorious title of King of *Albion*. And thus faithfull *Briſil* biddeth thee farwell, lamenting nothing ſo much as that ſhe was not in the galley by you to row for you, & beare all the trauel that you by reaſon of her were conſtrained to ſuffer, among them vnnatural Moores and galley ſlaues. Adieu.

Thine, and therefore thy ſelfe miſerable.

Briſilla.

This Letter I had no soner deliuered to the Page, but the Embassadors departed from the court, hauing taken their leaue of the King, and embarked themselues the nert day after to returne into *Spaine*. When they were gone, the King sent for me, and asked me whether I was not yet resolued to loue him, seeing he hated his own sonne for loue of me. Whereunto I answered, that if his Maiestie loued me indeed, he wold likewise loue his sonne, seeing ý I loued none but his sonne, nor could not ioue any other as long as I liued. But, (to be short, and as little tedious louing shepheards, as I possibly may) after we had reasoned and argued togither the space of a full houre, he in protesting how entirely he loued me, and that hee coulde not liue, vnlesse hee enioyed Grisil as his Queene: and I in defending, that I might not loue him, nor liue, if I breake my promise made to his sonne in his presence and by his consent; at length he burst out into these raging words. Proud Grisil, and vngratefull Dutches, thou despisest the high offers of a King, and contemnest the loue of a Monarch, that gouerneth a whole kingdome. And thinkest thou not that I can command thee, seeing an huge people is ruled by me: I promise thee, that I will teach thee not to say nay, when I demaund. And to be readie to grant, when I request. Therefore know, that thou shalt be married vnto me, wilt thou, or wilt thou not, and the marriage day shall be the ninth day after to morrow. See then that thou prepare thy selfe against that day, to condescend to my pleasure, least thou wilt rue thy stubborne hardneckednesse. And with that he turned from me into the nert chamber, & left me poore distressed wight readie to yéeld vp the ghoast, at the sounde of his conclusion. But snatching hope by the subiect, I thought either the kings minde might before the appointed day be altered, or fit opportunitie offered me to escape his tyrannie by flight. But neither I could in time get away, nor the king had forgotten his intent. But the day which he had appointed for the wedding being come, and all things in a readinesse, sent for me. I, although I did not well know what to do, yet resting vpon this

point,

point, rather to die, then to forsake Periander, and considering that furie was not to be represſed by force, where Maieſtie commanded; and that faire ſpéeches preuaile moſt, where the partie is weakeſt, I went preſently vnto him, and falling on my knées, beſæched his Maieſtie to pardon me for my former folly, promiſing, that whereas I had offended his Maieſties with ſtubbornneſſe, I meant to make him amends with obedience and loyaltie. And for that I could not but as yet mourne for my forepaſſed frenezie, I beſought his Maieſtie to protract the day of the wedding one moneth farther, to the end that I might prepare and eprone my ſelfe in ſuch maner, that the whole world may beare witneſſe that Griſil doth offer her ſelfe a worthie ſpouſe to ſo mightie a Bridegroome. The King was herewith ſo pleaſed, that giuing the farewell to all anger, willingly granted me my requeſt. Whereof I was not a litle reioyced, hoping before the ſpace of one month to be ſo farre from his reach, that he ſhould not force me to be married to any but to Periander. But I to compaſſe the concluſions of my intent, leaſt I ſhould ſéeme penſiue or ſorrowfull, wept all night, to the ende mine eyes might ſpare from ſheading teares in the day. Beſides, I ſéemed to be very buſie in beautifying my perſon with ſumptuous cloathes, coſtly Iewels, precious pearles, and other ornaments which I had laid aſide ſithence the loſſe of Periander. At laſt, about a wéeke before the prefixed time of our marriage, I eſpied an occaſion to get out of the Court; which though it was not ſo fit as I could wiſh, yet fearing leaſt if I did let that ſlip, I ſhould not haue the like offered the day being ſo neare at hand, I toke hold of it, which was this. There was a ſhip that ſixe wéekes before, had brought ſuger, figs, reiſons, dates, oranges & lemmons, to to *Albion*; the merchants whereof, hauing bought other ware return into *Spaine*, had made their prouiſiõ to go to ſea. Which when I heard, (for I was in nothing ſo attentiue as to learne of ſome barke that was bound toward *Caſtile*) I chaunged my ſexe in outward ſight, and in the forme of a ſhip boy, I went to the Spaniſh merchants, and beſeeched them to take me into

their seruice, for I was a poore fatherlesse childe that had for the space of two yeares ledde a Marriners life; which misliked me so,(for that I was weak of constitution,and my limbs tender by nature) that I haue taken leaue of the master of the ship,wherein I haue serued, to see if I could happen into some other kinde of good seruice. The merchants not doubting my tale to be other thē truth,because I spake Spanish vnto them, supposing that I had learned their spēch by trauelling into their countrey, liked me so well, that they went to Numbchance which of them should be my maister. Whereof I was so glad,that seeing the Marriners hoyse vp the sailes,and hale in the Anchor cable, I cared not for the chance of the Die, or whose seruant I should be; hoping that if the Gods would fauour vs with a gale of winde, that I should shortly arriue to the place where the ſaie of my life, and holde of my hope remained.But marke the taunting checke which Fortune gaue me. For we had scarce entered the mouth of the sea, but we were ouertaken by two swifte Pinnaces, so well furnished with all warlike prouision that they had bene able to maister foure such Barkes as the merchants ship wherein we were. To be short, that they calling to our Pylot that he should strike, durst not but obey; and I misdoubting that they were *Albion* shippes, sent to loke after me, kept my selfe vnder the ship hatches, where I so bepitched and betarred my face, that the iudgement of the eye could not preuaile to discerne who I was,if I might haue escaped speaking. But the Pylot who could not vnderstand the *Albion* spēch, called me to interpret what the *Albion* Pylot demanded of him.But I made as if I had bene so affraid that I could not speake: and while I heard them wrangling each in his owne language,one nothing vnderstanding the other,I tried to counterfeit my voice as well as I could, fearing least I should haue bene compelled at length to become their interpreter: which in trueth so happened. For the merchaunt my maister, considering the course of our Nauigation, was greatly hindered by their importunitie, and fearing least they were Pyrates and thought

to

to pilfer and robbe the Barke, and ſpoyle him and the other merchaunts of their goods and liues, forced mee to come to the vpper part of the ſhippe and to ſpeake to my Countrey men. Thus I conſtrayned whether I woulde or no, not onely to preſent my ſelfe vnto them that ſought me (for I had heard what they demanded, though none could vnderſtand them but my ſelfe, and therefore I was the better inſtructed what to ſaie vnto them, and how I ſhould interpret their ſayings vnto the Spaniard) but alſo to bewraie my voice vnto them, and to be the expounder that ſhould declare and explicate what they demaunded, and what the Spanyards anſwered. Wherefore being come into their preſence, I beganne to ſpeake Brittiſh; but that in ſuch order that they had much adoo to vnderſtand me, and toke more pleaſure to laugh at me, then to enquire after Briſil, whome the ſoles ſpake with, and thought that ſhe had bene ſome Moore or Turke. For the Admirall who was there in his owne proper perſon, hearing how crabbedly I cracked his Brittiſh language on the pate; what the diuell (quoth he) haue the Gods ſent vs hither, to mocke vs with our language after this ſort. No doubt but our paynes are well beſtowed to come thus farre into the ſea, to talke with ſuch an eloquent fellow. I beleeue certainlie, that he hath bene an Oratour to the Diuel three or foure yeares. Whereupon he aſked me what Countrey man I was, a Turke or a Iewe: I anſwered him, that I was which he would, for I knew not my ſelfe where I was borne. At length he aſked me where I had learned to ſpeake ſuch good Brittiſh, whereunto I made as if I had not marked that hée mocked and gybed with mée, ſayd, that when I was two or three yeares olde I was in *Albion* with my mother, for the ſpace of two or three yeares or thereabout, in which time, I learned ſo much of their language, that God bee thanked, it ſerueth my turne. Whereat they all burſt forth and laughed verie heartily, and at length, remembring *Briſil*, they aſked mee whither our Barke was bound: and I anſwered to *Barbary*: then they aſked whether

we

we had not any women passengers aboard, I answered, that we had no more then they saw, either men or women. They said they were not so content, but would search the shippe, and bad me to tell the Pylot that he should not resist their pleasure, for they would do it, if were forced to do it by the straight command of their king. Wherupon I told our Pylot this tale: that they were the king of *Albions* searchers, that scoured vp and downe the seas, to see if they could meet with any ship that carried such wares out of the country as were not granted or licenced by the king; and that because they suspected that the merchants that were in that ship had vnpriuiledged wares, they would for that purpose make search for them; and if they found none, they would not any longer hinder them of their vndertaken voyage. The Pylot willingly let them come aboard the barke, though the merchantes thought verily that they had bene Pyrates, and vsed that colour to obtaine their praie the easier. But they found themselues deceiued; for after the *Albion* Lords had throughly searched the ship, they returned into their Pinnace againe, without offering the least iniury in the world to the Spaniards; wherof they were glad, and I gladder, hauing escaped the danger which Fortune seemed to threaten me. And in fewe daies after, being speedily arriued at the wished hauen, my maister toke post horse for himselfe and me, and we rode to *Siuil*, in which Cittie my Periander laie imprisoned. And now I began to wish my selfe released from the subiection of my maister, for he imployed me in so many matters that I could not performe my dutie towardes him accordingly, and withall haue time and occasion to obtain my desire concerning Periander. Wherefore I sought all meanes possible to be rid of my maister, who was loth to part from me. At length I feined my selfe to be sicke, that I could neither eate nor drink, nor stand on my feete, but kept my bed, and being asked by him what I eiled, or what sickneſſe I had, I made as if I durst not tel him, at length seeing he was so importunate to know, I told him that it was the plague, whereof he was so affraide, that he would put me into an hospitall

among

among the diſeaſed. But I entreated him that he would rather leaue me to mine owne ſhift, then to place me among the diſeaſed; promiſing that if I eſcaped death, I would returne into his ſeruice before any other. And though he was loath to let me go where I ſhould want looking vnto, yet ſéeing that I had rather haue died then be carried to an Hoſpital, he gaue three or foure péeces of gold and ſent me packing, wiſhing that I might fare well. I thanked him for his kindneſſe, and the Gods for my libertie. And now I began maruellouſly to long for the ſight of my onely comfort Periander, who little knew that I was ſo neare him. But I could ſcarce imagine how I might come to him, and auoyd all ſuſpition. For I feared leaſt the King ſhould haue miſdoubted of my intent, and therefore haue written vnto the King of *Spaine* to make ſearch whether I were in his countrey, but eſpecially to watch whether any came vnto Periander, knowing that if I were in *Spaine* it was to come to him. The conſideration whereof, made me ſo carefull and ſo wary, that I looked before I leaped, and did nothing but being forethought. So that I paſſed by the priſon where Periander late euery day once or twiſe, and ſometimes more often, to ſée what likelihood there was that I might come néere him. I eſpied the maner of the priſon, the condition of the Jaylour, the eſtate of thoſe that frequented his company. At length I became ſo impatient, that I could not abide any longer delate, and therefore began to inuent ſome deceit or other to beguile the keepers, and come to the ſpeech of Periander. Firſt I purpoſed to apparell my ſelfe like ſome Italian Gentleman, and ſo to haue aſked the Jaylour leaue to ſpeake vnto the *Albion* Prince: but that ſéemed not the ſafeſt way. Afterwards, I thought to go like a Britiſh beggar, thinking that they would haue brought me to talke to the Britiſh Prince, to take pleaſure at our ſtrange parley. And this liked me worſe: for ſo I might haue eaſily bene entrapped. At laſt I found no better meanes then to counterfeyt my ſelfe to be an Egyptian Prophet and Fortune teller. So that I went into the ſtréet where the priſon ſtood, & a good way off (as if I had not thought

to come nére the prison) I beganne to sing an Egyptian enchantment, and I did so counterfeyt the tune thereof (though I knew not my selfe what sence my sonnet inferred,) that the Spaniards thought me an vpright Egyptian: and hauing ended my song, a number of youthes, mayds, women and men, also came flocking about me, holding vp their hands to know their fortune. I, as cunningly as I could, held the diuell a candle, and told them many good morrowes, and euil euenings, as I had oftentimes bin enformed ỳ the Egyptian figure Castres vsed to do, to deceiue the world. Yet neuertheles I vsed ỳ matter so ỳ they were content of their fortune, & liked me ỳ better. But I was so haled and pulled from one place to another, that I knew not how I might content them all. At length I was fetched by the mayds ỳ dwelt with ỳ Jaylor & his daughters to come thither, whither I went willingly, for ỳ was the cause of my practized sorcerie, & there was the man whose fortune made me become a fortune teller. To be short, the mayds of the house led me into a yard where they might secretly talke with me, & aske me questions concerning their fortunes. But it chanced ỳ my good hap was such, ỳ I might see Periander out of a window reaching vnto the yard where we were. But alacke, I spied that renowmed mirror of beautie, faire Florina, the daughter of the King of *Spaine*, standing by him: who entangled in the snare of fancy, & fettred in the pleasant contemplation of Perianders beautie, so loued him, ỳ she corrupted the Jailor with sums of mony, to vse her loue, not as a strange prisoner, but rather as a worthy gest. Whō she also in proper person somtimes visited to assuage his sorow. Which sight so amazed me, ỳ I could not tell what I said to the maids desirous to know their fortune. I felt a kind of sothing pleasure creepe into the vains of my hart, for the presence of my friend, and on the other side, a fearfull kind of grief possessed my soule, for that I was acquainted with his company: mistrusting whether poore Brisil was committed to the winds, & rased out of the heart of Periander, by ỳ matchlesse curtesies which he receiued of faire Florina. But not to suspend you with my long & endlesse dis-

course

course (louing shepheards) knowe that faire Florina espying what dealings I had with the Iailors daughter, as newsicke as the rest, willed the Iailour to bring me into the chamber where she was with Periander, to learne what cunning I had. Therfore I being led by the Iailor before her, saluted her and her company with all the humilitie I could, but yet in such order ỹ my besmouged cheekes were died with a vermilion red at ỹ sight of Periander. But Florina imputing the change of my hue to shamefastnesse, & thinking I being a simple swad, was abashed to see my self in their presence, bed me come nére her boldly, saying she ment to be my patient, and to see whether I knew by the lineaments of her hand what fortune she had, and was like to haue. Imagine (gentle shepheards) what minde I had either to tel her fortune or to giue her an answer being in that case; yet taking all the courage ỹ in such extremitie could cleaue to my hart, I said. My skil is too smal to coniecture of so high constellations; for I hold opinion ỹ the destinies of those that are of such noble descent as your selfe, are more intricate then ỹ constellatiõ of base persons. And therfore if my diuinatiõs proue falfe or litle agréeing to ỹ truth, I leaue your grace to be burdened with ỹ blame, séeing it is your pleasure that I should coniecture of your lucke, & not mine owne presumption. And therfore thus much I say of your fortune. I wil not touch your parentage, wealth, honor, & likelihood of great renowne, for that is knowne to all the world; but I wil tell you of that which is most doubtful, & more delightful vnto you, as my simple knowledge teacheth me. For (vnlesse I am deceiued) you loue (Ladie,) and that most loyally, but I see one doubt which is like to redound to your sorrow, that you shal haue a shrewd enemy to your desire, & a terrible foe to your wished loue. And to yéeld you a reason of my diuination, marke the line of affection in your hand, it is streight, a token of pure loue, and faithfull affection accompanied with loyaltie: and these two short wrinckles which you see of each side of the foresaid line, are token of the crosse you are like to indure in obteining your harts ease. Neither would I haue your grace to thinke that the

cauſe of this il ſucceſſe dependeth only on the perſon who hath your heart in hold; for there be many euents and chances that we cannot foreknow or forethinke, which may breed your ſorrow. But hoping that your grace is minded as the Aſtrologian that ſaid, *Inclinationes non ſunt edicta prætorum*, that inclinations be not ordinances and decrées of maiors; ſhall be able to command the ſtarres and rule ouer them, according to that old ſaying. *Sapiens dominabitur aſtris*. I am glad thou takeſt me to be ſo wiſe Egyptian; replied Florina. But I pray thée, canſt thou not tell mee more particularly of ſome aduenture to come? No truly Madame (quoth I) may it pleaſe your grace to beare with my rudeneſſe and ignorance, which is not able to content your pleaſure, and ſatisfie your minde concerning this point. Why then quoth ſhe, let me know what you can ſay to this Gentleman, for I hope as I admitted him to heare my lucke, ſo he will not be angry if I heare his fortune. But Periander, (as I well perceiued) knew me; for I ſaw his face receiue ſuch diuerſe colours, and his countenance altered ſo ſodeinly, that Florina maruelled what had befallen vnto him, that he ſtood ſo perplexed. For he conceiued infinit pleaſure in ſéeing his onely ioy ſo neare him, and contrarily he was grée-ued that I found him with Florina, fearing leaſt I ſhould ſuſpect him leſſe conſtant, and ſo my ſelfe become leſſe faithfull. Florina beholding Periander, wiſt not what to ſay, & although I was ſorie to ſée him in that taking, yet becauſe I knew the occaſion and reaſon thereof, I was the better contented, hoping that it was no more then I thought it to be, and that he was lead in a traunce by my vnexperted preſence. Yet I was commanded by Florina to depart, ſhe thinking it now no time to tell any more fortunes. And ſo I was forced to leaue poore Periander, before he was come to himſelfe; although I feared that as my preſence had ſtroken him, ſo my departure would kill him. Neuertheleſſe, ſéeing there was no remedie, I toke it as patiently as I could, and away I went; though I was not permitted to go farre. For the maides of the houſe ſo flung about me, and kept ſuch adoo with me to know the ſequell of

their

their fortunes,and to haue me fully resolue them in all points which they desired to knowe, (seeing I was so hastily called from them by Florina, that I had not halfe satisfied them before) that I could scarce get from them. And my lucke was such, that while I was busie with answering to their questions, the Jailor had heard that Florina was misled in ỹ Court, and loked for,to come to the Quéene her mother,which when he had signified vnto her,she staied not,but incontinently hied to the Court. Periander therefore by this time being restored to his wits,and seeing both time and place serue to talke with me in secret,to the end that I should not be discried,willed the Jaylour to bid me come vnto him,for that he earnestly desired to conferre with me about the nature of certaine hearbes that grow in *Aegypt*,and other peculiar matters. To be short,the Jaylour sent me in to Periander, and there left me with him alone. Where he came and imbraced me,his eyes distilling and gushing forth whole streames of teares: saying, Ah Brisil,Brisil,pardon me,that you were not by me welcommed and entertained at your arriuall, according to your deserts, & my dutie. For where necessitie nippeth,all must obey. And doubt not that Leander had bene more welcome to louing Ero,if the swelling waues had not hindred his iourny by glutting themselues with his carkase, and so staied him from the wished tower vnto which he was swimming, then thou most worthie Brisil to thy faithfull Periander. It were too long for me (worthie shepheards) to declare what other cherishments & louing congratulations that he made. To be short,we talked of many matters(as you may well thinke,)of sir Massicourts conspiration and treason especially,which were the first step to all our troubles; of the Quéenes death, of the Kings vnnaturall tyranne,of my secret slight,of our fortune on the sea,of my master: to be short, there was nothing raked vp in silence, that concerned our fortune. At length,the chiefest matter and hardest point of all our conference was offered, when as we hauing enformed each other of all our aduentures since that time that we were by the policie of traitrous Massicourt separated,

entred into conſultation what we might do to ſhun the immi-
nent danger which was like to fall vpon vs, by reaſon of the
Kings wrathfulneſſe. And after we had long deliberated, now
intending to vſe this meanes, now that, at length we conclu-
ded to take the vantage of the time, ſéeing that by meanes of
Florina, Periander was not kept ſo ſtraightly, but ý he might
go ſecretly out of the priſon, and walke whither he would to
take the aire. Therefore fearing leaſt if his father the King
of *Albion* ſhould vppon my flight ſend newe Embaſſadours to
the King of *Spaine*, to haue his ſonne put to death (for he di-
uerſe times ſwore vnto me, that Periander ſhould die if he a-
my way hindered his marriage with me,) or brought *Albion*
to be dealt withall not according to fatherly affection, but his
mercileſſe rage, we thought beſt not to expect the worſt, but
to plaie ſafe as long as time and occaſion was offered vs. To
make fewe wordes, Periander the next morning before day,
got out of the priſon (telling the Jaylor that he went to a place
where Florina had appointed him to méete her) and comming
to the houſe where I waighted for him, ſhe preſently depar-
ted from *Siuil*, intending to trauell towardes ſome ſolitarie
place, where we might liue vntill we heard of the death of
the King of *Albion*. And becauſe we ſhould not be knowne,
if ſearch were made after vs, we cloathed our ſelues both a-
like, in the habite of Countrey maydes, as if wee had bene
two ſiſters

Trauelling thus togither, at length we arriued to a certain
village which is called *Ezla*, where we purpoſed to kéepe our
reſidence. And although wée had ſufficient wherewithall
to mainteine our ſelues, yet the better to auoyde ſuſpition,
and to haue wherein to imploy our leiſure and to take our
delight, and paſtimes, wée bought a flocke of ſhéepe, and
learned to playe the ſhepheardes as well as we could; none
of all the inhabitantes knowing but that we were two ſi-
ſters. For Periander was yet but yong and had no beard,
and beſides, hée was ſo faire of complexion, that it had bene
impoſſible for one to ſuſpect that he was no woman.

After

After we had passed ouer one moneth in that hauen of content and passing pleasant kinde of life, I enioying the presence of my Periander, and he of his Brisil in spight of the world, Fortune began to enuy at our felicitie, and to euert the happie estate wherein we liued. For it chanced that we being both at the feast which was celebrated in honour of the Goddesse Ceres, there was a yong shepheard being sonne vnto one of the richest farmers of our village, who casting his eyes on Sybilla, (for so I named Periander, who was thought to be my sister) was fettered in the snare of his beautie, that wee were so troubled with the importunate requestes and sutes of this youth, that we wist not how to dehort him from follie, or how to quench the burning flames which consumed the poore shepheards heart. For the crueller Sybilla my supposed sister seemed to be, the more he was prouoked to hope for mercie, the colder she shewed her selfe to be, the hotter hee was, the more shee disdeined, the more earnest hee sued: the more she crossed him for his fondnesse, the more he hoped for kindnesse.

In so much that poore Petulca (for so was that wretched shepheard called) so miserably loued, that all the Countrey knew by his colour, what Captaine he honoured and serued. His ioy and welfare which was wont to recreate the whole companie of the inhabitaunts, was chaunged into melancholie.

His yong face which was a fashion of modestie, grace, mirth, beautie and comelinesse, waxed wrinkeled, his limbes weakened, and all his bodie decaied. So that as hee was generally pitted of all men, so were wee most wofully greeued at his hard fortune, though wee could not helpe or remedie the same.

Neuertheless seeing that Petulca ceassed not from his sute, but so hotly followed his cause, pleading for mercie to saue his life, I counselled Periander to faine as if he loued him; hoping that wee might by that deuise and meane escape the ill will and anger which wee were lyke to gaine of all our

neighbours

entred into conſultation what we might do to ſhun the immminent danger which was like to fall vpon vs, by reaſon of the Kings wrathfulneſſe. And after we had long deliberated, now intending to vſe this meanes, now that, at length we concluded to take the vantage of the time, ſeeing that by meanes of Florina, Periander was not kept ſo ſtraightly, but ỹ he might go ſecretly out of the priſon, and walke whither he would to take the aire. Therefore fearing leaſt if his father the King of *Albion* ſhould vppon my flight ſend newe Embaſſadours to the King of *Spaine*, to haue his ſonne put to death (for he diuerſe times ſwore vnto me, that Periander ſhould die if he any way hindered his marriage with me,) or brought *Albion* to be dealt withall not according to fatherly affection, but his mercileſſe rage, we thought beſt not to expect the worſt, but to plaie ſafe as long as time and occaſion was offered vs. To make fewe wordes, Periander the next morning before day, got out of the priſon (telling the Jaylor that he went to a place where Florina had appointed him to méete her) and comming to the houſe where I waighted for him, ſhe preſently departed from *Siuil*, intending to trauell towardes ſome ſolitarie place, where we might liue vntill we heard of the death of the King of *Albion*. And becauſe we ſhould not be knowne, if ſearch were made after vs, we cloathed our ſelues both alike, in the habite of Countrey maydes, as if wee had bene two ſiſters

Trauelling thus togither, at length we arriued to a certain village which is called *Ezla*, where we purpoſed to kéepe our reſidence. And although wée had ſufficient wherewithall to mainteine our ſelues, yet the better to auoyde ſuſpition, and to haue wherein to imploy our leiſure and to take our delight, and paſtimes, wée bought a flocke of ſhéepe, and learned to playe the ſhepheardes as well as we could; none of all the inhabitantes knowing but that we were two ſiſters. For Periander was yet but yong and had no beard, and beſides, hé was ſo faire of complexion, that it had bene impoſſible for one to ſuſpect that he was no woman.

After

After we had passed ouer one moneth in that hauen of content and passing pleasant kinde of life, I enioying the presence of my Periander, and he of his Brisil in spight of the world, Fortune began to enuy at our felicitie, and to euert the happie estate wherein we liued. For it chanced that we being both at the feast which was celebrated in honour of the Goddesse Ceres, there was a yong shepheard being sonne vnto one of the richest farmers of our village, who casting his eyes on Sybilla, (for so I named Periander, who was thought to be my sister) was fettered in the snare of his beautie, that wee were so troubled with the importunate requestes and sutes of this youth, that we wist not how to dehort him from follie, or how to quench the burning flames which consumed the poore shepheards heart. For the crueller Sybilla my supposed sister seemed to be, the more he was prouoked to hope for mercie, the colder she shewed her selfe to be, the hotter hee was, the more shee disdeined, the more earnest hee sued: the more she crossed him for his fondnesse, the more he hoped for kindnesse.

In so much that poore Petulca (for so was that wretched shepheard called) so miserably loued, that all the Countrey knew by his colour, what Captaine he honoured and serued. His ioy and welfare which was wont to recreate the whole companie of the inhabitaunts, was chaunged into melancholie.

His yong face which was a fashion of modestie, grace, mirth, beautie and comelinesse, waxed wrinkeled, his limbes weakened, and all his bodie decaied. So that as hee was generally pitted of all men, so were wee most wofully greeued at his hard fortune, though wee could not helpe or remedie the same.

Neuertheless seeing that Petulca ceassed not from his sute, but so hotly followed his cause, pleading for mercie to saue his life, I counselled Periander to faine as if he loued him; hoping that wee might by that deuise and meane escape the ill will and anger which wee were lyke to gaine of all our

neighbours

neighbours if the youth had died. For his passion was such, that nothing but death only could moue him to leaue his loue. Thus Petulca louing a yong Prince in the habit of a louely shepheard, and perceiuing that he had wonne the fort which he had so fiercely assaulted, reuiued againe, and in short time became as pert & as trim as euer he had bene. He came twise or thrise in the weeke vnto vs, and so pleasantly discoursed of diuers matters as occasion offered, that we would not haue chaunged the recreation which we had by his honest companie and mery conuersation, for the richest Iewell of *India*. As he had liued in this contented and pleasant maner one month, it happened that the daughter of a shepheard called Petrueco, dwelling in the next farme to our cotage, was so intricated in the net of affection, and so intangled in the beautie of Petulca, that she allured him by continuall fauours, louing glaunces, curtuous greetings, pleasant speeches, and all means she could inuent to gain his good will, and to moue him to loue her. But all the world was not able to alter his minde; though we wished that he might haue bene enticed by her deserts, to repent of his first bargaine. At length when Malorena (so was this vnhappy shepheard named) espied ý Petulca was so vngratefull that he would not any way requite her curtesies with fauour, she began most deadly to hate my sister (I meane Periander) supposing her to be the cause of all her woe. For as she knew Petulca was in loue of my said sister, so she thought that he was as well liked of her. Which induced her to be persuaded that we of purpose entertained him the more kindly to hinder her matter: whereas contrarily when we knew that she so deerly affectioned him, we made lesse account of him, hoping that he wearied with our coynesse, might haue lent his eare to his new mistresse that honoured him so highly. Yet howsoeuer we wisht her well, and longed that she might enioy her hearts desire; she neuertheless being of contrary opinion, became our mortall foe. If she chanced to passe by vs, she did cast such a lowring looke vpon vs, as if she would haue eaten vs. If she had lighted at vnawares in the company where we were,

she

she thought her selfe the worse; if she spake of vs to others, she belyed vs, and inuented tales to defame and discredit vs. Yet all this serued not; but intending fully to reuenge her selfe of the iniury which she dreamed that we offered her, she excogitated this stratagem. There was in the same billage a beautifull yong mayd, neece to this Malorena, who by reason that she kept her sheep in the next pasture to ours, kept great company with vs, and became verie familiar and friendly vnto vs. Which her neece Malorena espying, thought to vse her as the instrument of her supposed practises. Therefore on a certaine morning she sent for her, & made such a sugred speech vnto her, declaring the occasion why she sent for her, the estate of her loue towardes Petulca, the loue of Petulca towardes Sibilla *alias* Periander, and briefly all that concerned this matter, desiring her not to deny her friendly aide and helpe herein. To that to be short, Bergama (for that was this other shepheards name) promised her neece that what she could do, she would be readie to performe. Whereupon she told her what she would haue her to doe, instructing her in all pointes concerning the same. Which tended to no other end then to worke our woe, and by expelling vs by their treacherie out of those quarters, to enioy the loue of Petulca. In so much that these two neeces hauing agreed and concluded vpon the premises, thus began Bergama to plaie her part. But you must note, that when Petulca the amorous shepheard vsed to come to our field, his way laie by the place where Bergama kept her sheepe. So that she espying him, on a certaine morning betimes marching ouer her ground to come to passe the time with vs in mery chat, according to his maner: she stepped vnto him, and knowing with what kinde of talke she might staie his iourny, she cunningly held him prattle vntill such time as she espied that I was alone. For commonly my sister Sybil *alias* Periander, towardes noone vsed to goe to our lodging, not so well able to suffer the heate of midday, as I. Bergama therefore espying me alone, called me vnto her, and asked me where my sister was (as if she had not knowne it) when I had answered that she was

gone home, why then (quoth ſhe,) ſéeing thou art alone, I pray kéepe company with me a little and this ſhepheard, who although he had rather be in company with Sybil, yet for that maugre his will, he muſt this none be my gueſt, will not be diſpleaſed with your preſence, ſith he loueth you: the better for your ſiſters ſake. With that ſhe did leade vs both into a delectable arbour, whence I might ſée my ſhéepe as well as if I had bene in mine owne field, and therefore was the ſooner intreated to ſtaie with her. In the midſt of this arbour was a table of marble ſtone, on which ſhe laid a faire napkin, and ſet before vs ſuch cheare as was moſt wiſhed for in the Countrey at that time of the yeare: praying vs to ſit downe and take ſuch fare as ſhe had in good part, ſith ſhe enuited vs not for the excellencie of her delicates, but for good will and pleaſure of our companie. So ſhe placed the ſhepheard Petulca and me together on one ſide of the Table, and ſhée her ſelfe ſate on the other. While we were thus merily banketting and talking together, thinking or dreaming of no harme, Malorena by whoſe counſaile and inſtinct all this was practiſed, hauing notice of our being together, by meanes of a little wench ſent vnto her by Bergama her néece, in poſte haſte went to our Cottage, and entering into the houſe ſpake vnto Periander in this manner.

Faire Sybil, I doubt not but you haue heard of the loue and affection which I haue borne towards the ſhepheard Petulca, and that therefore I ſéemed to be diſpleaſed with you, becauſe he ſo dearly loued you, and for your ſake deſpiſed and diſdained me. But now, ſéeing I know the contrary, and being enformed of one of his eſpeciall friends, how the matter ſtandeth, I perceiue that I haue greater occaſion to be angrie with your ſiſter then with you; and therefore I thought good to come vnto you, and to craue pardon of you, for that I was offended with you without cauſe. In reſpect whereof for acquittance, I will now ſhewe you as great friendſhip, as before I wiſhed you euill. You ſhall therefore vnderſtand that your ſiſter Briſilla doeth moſt vnnaturally deale with you in louing

Petulca,

Petulca, whereas she seemeth not to esteeme of him, and Petulca himselfe doth most shamefully abuse your curtesie, in that you giue such trust and credit to his feined speeches and dissembling persuasions. For he therewith bringeth you in a foles paradice, causing you to beleeue that you are the saint whome he honoureth, where as he like a treacherous caitife loueth your sister Brisil so affectionately, that he neuer espieth her out of your company, but he hieth vnto his Ladie, passing the time with passionate speeches, swearing each other loue and loyaltie, and therewith conspiring togither how they may best deceiue you, & feed you with this false opinion that Petulca loueth you, because you should not perceiue that he and your sister could play concord in your absence, though they were alwaies at discord in your presence. And for because you shall finde my words to be true, and acknowledge me to be your perfect frend, whom you suspected to be your foe (as in truth for a time I could not well disgest you,) I wil lead you in a place where you shall see your vnnaturall sister and dissembling sutor banquetting togither. You know my Neece Bergama very well, I doubt not, which is as shrewd a wench as any in the world, if you knew her qualities. And I thinke also that you perceiue what great acquaintance there is betweene her and your sister. This Bergama my cunning Neece hath granted them her house for their secrete meeting place, where Petulca after hee hath bene with you, and sometimes without coming vnto you, staieth till you come home, and then is sure to enioy the companie of his louing Brisil. For assone as you are gone from her, thither she trippeth. And if you will follow my counsaile and goe with me, you shall see how louingly she at this present sitteth on Petulcas side, and maketh good cheare with him in Bergamas arbour. I would haue you to goe with me, because if we goe to your fielde, we are like to misse of our purpose, the reason is, for that my shrewde neece Bergamas standeth on her holde, and watcheth for your comming, and as soone as shee can espie you, the conuert breaketh vp, the shepheard marcheth on forward, and

your ſiſter returneth to her ſhéepe. But where I wil lead you, we ſhall not be ſéene, and yet ſée all. And then take Malorena to be your friend, when your owne eyes ſhall forſee you to confeſſe the ſame.

Periander giuing faith to this Syrens ſwéete ſong, went with her, and according to her saying, ſaw vs togither, though we poore ſoules moſt innocent, and thought of no ſuch ſuppoſed villanie. Yet Fortune to marre our matter the more, and to giue the greater colour to Malorenas tale, would haue it ſo, that while Periander ſtood with that traitreſſe and loked vpon vs; the ſhepheard Petulca being of cuſtom mery and pleaſant, ſmacked his lips on my cheeke as I ſat by him; which I knowing his humour, that he did it of wantonneſſe and not of loue, made not ſtraunge of it, and ſéemed not to take it in ill part; ſith the ſhepheard ment no euill by it. But alaſſe (louing ſhepheards) Periander toke it ſo heauily, and ſo ingraued both that which he had heard of Malorena, and ſéene with his own eyes, in the ground of his tender heart; that now I am compelled to deteſt that traitreſſe Malorena, to hate that deceitfull Pergama, and to curſe Fortune yet at this houre. For, when Periander had ſéene vs in the arbour, he returned home preſently, and thanking Malorena, that ſhe had ſo faithfully bewraied our treacherie vnto him, deſired her to returne home with him, where he wrote a Letter vnto me, and ſealing it vp, gaue it to Malorena; and not doubting of her fidelitie, praied her to deliuer it vnto me. Which he promiſed to do, and departed from Periander: who incontinently went his way I know not whither. For ſince that time that he went home and I was called by Bergama, I neuer ſawe him, nor heard of him, nor could know what is become of him. The traitreſſe ſéeing how cunningly ſhe had deluded her neighbour, vnripped the ſeales of the Letter, thinking ſhe might be her ſecretary, ſéeing ſhe had done her ſo good a turne; but by chance, looking on the ſubſcription before ſhe had read the contents, & ſeeing Periander written in ſtéed of Sybilla, was ſtroken in a maze on the ſuddeine, not knowing what it meant, but to be the better enformed, ſhe

read

read the Letter which was thus penned.

To Brisil, health and pleasure.

Brisil, to the ende that thou maist enioy thy *Petulca* at thy will and pleasure without any hinderance, I haue left thee: and my selfe meane to liue solitarie in some wildernesse, seeing the societie wherein I onely delighted, is taken from me. Loue *Petulca*, and loue him so, that thou hate me if thou wilt; for I cannot but loue thee, and so loue thee, that for feare least I be troublesome vnto thee, I haue separated my selfe from thee, wishing thee all the pleasure and delight thou canst desire, & praying the Gods to saue *Petulca* from all mischance for thy sake. Farewell.

Euer thine, though thou wearie to be his.

Periander.

When Malorena had read that Letter, she could not but maruell at the strangenesse of the case, for she perceiued therby what kinde of sisters we were, and though she was sorie that she had offered such true louers that iniurie, yet glad for that she hoped to enioy the loue of Petulca, she staied till he came home, and then she shewed him Periander's Letter, telling him from point to point how she had serued vs. For she thought when Petulca should know how he was by vs deceiued, in that he loued a man for a woman, a youth for a mayde, yea Periander for Sybilla, that then he would be sorie that he so vnwisely had disdained her selfe, and set so litle by her loue. But yet she was deceiued; for Petulca hauing attentiuely listned to her tale, and well perpended the Letter, was so angrie at her and encraged, that she had committed such vilany against vs, that he sweare he would himselfe reuenge the iniurie by her offered vnto vs. And therewith flung from her, and pre-

sently declared all the matter vnto me with teares trickeling downe his eyes, and shewed me the Letter which Periander had written vnto mée. Whereat I was both so ashamed and amazed, that I fell in a sound. But being by the industrie of Petulca come to my selfe againe, I conceiued that griefe for the departure of Periander, and the false opinion which he holdeth of me, which now so tormenteth & vexeth me, that I wish I had fared as wicked Malorena did, who vnderstanding that Petulca had opened all her treacherie and diuellish practises vnto me, falling into desperation, for that she had attempted so much villanie in vaine, cast her selfe into the riuer, and so was drowned. By meanes whereof, the whole vilage, yea and the neighbour townes, were filled with the rumor of this tragedie; and I the next morning making no man of my counsel, departed from thence to séeke my sorrowfull Periander.

Thus (louing shepheards) haue you heard the discourse of my miserable life, which now is so much the more miserable, by how much the more pleasure and ioy I haue had therein. For, the griefe which I suffer because Periander (the thought of whom, and remembrance of whose loue, is the onely thing whereby I liue) departed from me with such an opinion, is so extreame, that the greatest pleasure which euer I enioyed in all my life, is no way equiualent or comparable vnto it. Iudge then your selues (worthy shephards) whether I haue not cause to curse Fortune, and blame euen the Gods of crueltie.

Wherewith Brisilla hauing ended her history, began newly to weep and lament most pittifully. But Ismenia and Periclio, who had so attentiuely giuen eare to her discourse, that they had not interrupted any part thereof, comforted her as much as they might. And séeing that by this time they were come to the place where Ismenia had appointed to rest that night, they made prouision for supper, as merrily as their passions would suffer them, falling to their meate, refreshed their weary bonies, and afterward toke their rest.

Assone as Apollo had lighted on his fiery stéeds to runne his wonted course, Periclio, Ismenia, & Brisil, rising from their bed,

bed, betoke them to their iourny towards the temple of Diana, euery one of them hoping that they should haue their griefe if not remedied, yet at least something mitigated. For the wisdom & diuine power of the Lady president of that temple, was so blazed by the trump of fame through all the countries about her, that no man in her time which had heard of her celestiall knowledge, doubted but that his euill might by ỳ Ladie be redressed, though it were neuer so maruelous, so it passed not the bounds of possibilitie. This Lady was called Felicia, of whose wisdome, knowledge, beautie, excellency, curtesie, gracious fauour towards all true louers, and vertuous pietie towards all distressed persons; Monte Mayor, largely describeth in his Diana; and forasmuch as the same Monte Mayor copiouslie setteth forth the sumptuousnesse and magnificence of the pallace wherein this Ladie Felicia kept her Court, in the fourth booke of the first part of his said Diana, I thinke it superfluous for me to retaine the Readers eare with vnnecessary relations of those things that by others haue so exactly bene performed.

Wherefore turning the gentle Reader desirous to know the curiositie of the sumptuous building both of the Temple and Pallaice before mentioned, with the situation of the place, to the fourth booke of Monte Mayors Diana, I will prosecute the matter of my historie.

Turning then to our three trauellers, which we left in their way towards the Temple of Diana, when they had gone the space of an houre or therabout, they came into a faire greẽ, where they sawe a shepheard and a Knight lying on the tender grasse a slẽpe both togither. Ismenia and the Ladie Brisill maruelling at that sight, seeing two persons of such different calling, so fellow-like lye sleeping one by the other, wist not what it meant; for they sawe neither flocke of sheepe by them, nor yet anie other companie. But Perierio told them, that hee knewe both the shepheard and the Knight also; for he had both seene them at his fathers house, and heard them declare their sorowes to his sisters. So while they laie and slept,

Perierio

Perierio declared vnto Iſmenia and the Ladie Briſil, who they were, (for it was Marcelio, and Maffeo) and as briefly as he could, rehearſed the ſumme of both their diſcourſes which they made in his preſence to his ſiſter Euphilia, cõcerning the cauſe of their trauell and trouble, when ſhe ſo curtuouſly with her ſiſter Perina, entertained them at her fathers lodging. And when as he had told them as much as he knew of Marcelio and Maffeo, (which greatly delighted both Iſmenia and the Ladie Briſil, for they conceiued infinit pleaſure in hearing ỹ ſtrange hiſtorie of their liues) he awaked them, both deſirous to know what ſucceſſe they had in their trauell, and how they had ſo happily hit of one anothers company. Maffeo not ſléeping ſo ſoundly as Marcelio, awaked at the firſt call, and maruelling to ſée ſuch beautiful ſhepheards about him, thought that it was ſome ominious token of good hap; and as he beheld them more narrowly, eſpying Perierio, he leaped vp ſuddenly, and imbraced him ſo curtuouſly, yéelding him a thouſand *Bezolas manos* and thankes for his gentle entertainment at his fathers country houſe, that not Perierio himſelfe onely, but Iſmenia alſo, and the Lady Briſil, could not but praiſe the Knight for his gratuitie and thankfulneſſe. And being aſked of Perierio whether he had found his Eleonora, and where he had met with Marcelio, he anſwered, that after he parted from him and his ſiſters, he found Marcelio within two daies after, exclaiming againſt Fortune for her accurſed inconſtancie, & moſt bitterly lamenting the miſerable eſtate he was in for his Alcida, who continually fled from him when ſhe could heare of his arriual to the place where ſhe was. In ſo much (quoth Maffeo) that when I heard Marcelio (whom I till that time neuer had ſéene) ſo pitifully breath forth his plaints to the mercileſſe ſkies, I thought my ſelfe fauoured of the Gods, that I was not only tormented with the ſting of aduerſitie, ſeeing there were more that bewailed their aduentures then my ſelfe. And in truth I ſo pitied Marcelio his caſe, that I aſſuaged mine owne griefe by comforting him, when I found him ſo deſolate and void of all conſolation and hope. So that he glad of my companie, and I

of

of his, after we had declared our troubles each to other, we purposed to trauell togither, and so haue kept one the others companie these fiue daies. In which time we haue coursed ouer most part of all the villages about the riuer *Ezla*; where old Camillo your father dwelleth. And as we were one euening something late in a pleasant groue, some fortie leagues from this place, we ouercome by the wearisomenesse of our iourney, and heauinesse of our sorrows fel a sléepe. Where being awaked by three most beautifull nymphs, of them receiued a Letter subscribed vnto vs both: whereof we greatly maruelled, séeing that no man in the worlde knew of our amitie and friendship, which was but of two or three daies continuance. Neuertheless we hoped more then we feared. For we thought that such diuine things could but happen for our better lucke and content. Wherefore vnknitting the Letter we read it, and found these to be the contents.

Felicia, seruant to the Goddesse Diana, to the valorous Knights Marcelio and Maffeo.

MAruaile not (most worthie Knights) that my Nymphs amidst the solitarie groues, bring you message from mee, being vnknowne vnto you. For seeing that I take pleasure in nothing so much as in succouring those that professe chastitie and true loue, when as by the vncertaine doome of the changeable Goddesse Fortune, they be led into the irkesome path of aduersitie, and pestred with sorrows for the vnhappie and ouerthwart successe of their honest and worthie desires; when I was informed at the altar of *Diana*, of your deserts, and vnderstood how worthily you haue merited not only to enioy your wished loue, but also to be crowned with a glorious Lawrell in token of your loyaltie; how could I do lesse then send my Nymphs vnto you, straying as forlorne, and to set you in the path that shall bring you to the accomplishment of all your heroicall desires? Take the way that my messengers appoint you, and you shall haue occasion to hope, *Marcelio* for his *Alcida*, and *Maffeo* for

his faithfull *Eleonora*. Farewell.

When we had read this Letter, not knowing whether we dreamed, or were deceiued with ſome phantaſie or vaine viſion, we loked on the Nymphs gazing on their beautie; but knew not what anſwer to make. But they ſo graciouſly ſpake vnto vs with ſuch a ſetled and graue countenance, beautified with pleaſantneſſe and curteſie, ſaying, Be not abaſhed at our preſence worthie Knights; for we are ſent hither not to harme you, but helpe you; to giue you comfort, & courage your minds now diſtreſſed. Marcelio taking heart, gaue them this anſwere, Worthie Nymphes, ſith we be not able to make you anie part of amendes for this your high deſert, I beſeech the ſacred powers of heauen to recompence your fauour towards vs. In the meane time if occaſion were offered that our ſeruice might requite your curteſie, till death we acknowledge our ſelues bounde both vnto you and the ſoueraigne Ladie Felicia, who hath ſent you hither to direct our ſtraying paces, and addreſſe vs in ſome ſtaied path, by following of which we may obtaine the end of our hapleſſe iourney.

Curtuous Knight (replied one of the Nymphs) recompence we neither deſerue nor deſire; our meſſage we bring and thus deliuer it. Seeing you haue read the Letter, it may pleaſe you to ſtaie heere till you ſee vs no longer, but ſo, that you marke well what way wee take, and then follow vs at your pleaſure: and you ſhall not miſſe of the way which our Ladie doth write off. And therewith the Nymphes moſt curtuouſly taking their leaues departed from vs, though we were ſorrie to ſee them goe, and leaue vs behinde them. Yet we incouraged by their wordes, followed, being led by the guide of hope, not ſo much knowing whether we goe right, as hoping that wee are in the way which the Ladie promiſed that we ſhould take.

Thus (Perierio,) haue you heard what ſucceſſe we haue had ſince I was with you.

When Perierio, Iſmenia, and the Ladie Briſil, had heard the

the wordes of Maffeo, maruelled at the ſtrangeneſſe thereof, and told him, that vnleſſe they were deceiued, they were in their direct way to the Temple of Diana, whither they alſo trauelled to the ſame Felicia, to craue her aide and counſaile for the abridgement of their ſorrowes. Maffeo paſſing glad of that, waked Marcelio, who in like manner as his fellow had done, knew and ſaluted Perierio. And after they had verie curtuouſly greeted one another, and each diſcharged him of his dutie according to the rules of ciuilitie, they marched on purſuing their iourney. And for as much as Iſmenia and the Ladie Briſil had partly by Perierio before either of the Knightes were awaked, and partly by Maffeo, while Marcelio in his ſhepheards weede yet ſleeped, bene enformed of their fortunes, they requeſted Perierio, Iſmenia, and the Ladie Briſil, each of them to be the cauſe of their trauell. Which to beguile the wearieſome iourny, and to pleaſure the knights, they did all three performe.

When they had ended each his diſcourſe, they came neere to a moſt pleaſant groue, beautified with ſundrie ranckes of tall trees, which yelded ſuch a pleaſant ſhadowe, that they could not paſſe by that place without entring into it, and enioying ſuch pleaſure as the amerritie thereof did offer them. This groue was ſo perfectly made by Natures ſkill, and hedged with ſuch pleaſant buſhes, that the manner thereof farre exceeded the artificiall gardening inuented by the ſubtilitie of mortall men.

As theſe louers walked vp and downe the groue, when they came neare the hedge, they ſate downe, and liſtning, they heard certaine ſhepheards ſinging to the ſounde of their oaten pipes. Which ſhepheards belonged to the Ladie Felicia, and were called Cuſtophilus and Eromaus. Their ſinging tended to this ſenſe.

Cuſtophilus.

Apollo ſeated on his golden ſteed,
No ſooner gins to clime the mounting skie,
But *Coridon*, his tender Lambes to feed,
To pleaſant fields with them doth carefull hie.
He lets them nibble on the ſauory graſſe,
And wilie ſounds his pipe to praiſe his laſſe.

Eromaus.

NO ſooner *Phillis*, ſhaking off her ſleepe,
Doth ſpie the glory of *Auroras* face:
But to their wonted paſtures driues her ſheepe,
And treads the green-graſſe with a nipping pace.
She heares her *Coridon* doth ſound her name,
She ſteppeth neare, of him to do the ſame.

Cuſtophilus.

FAire is my loue (quoth *Coridon* the ſwaine)
For in her face ſits *Venus* Queene of loue:
Who liketh *Phillis*, liketh not in vaine,
For how could Nature frame a brauer doue?
Ye heauens the wrathful gods to anger moue,
If *Coridon* to her vnfaithfull proue.

Eromaus.

FAire is my friend (quoth *Phillis* in replie)
For in his forehead *Cupid* takes his place:
And prints his trophes in his louely eie,
Wherein ſhould I then but *Coridon* imbrace?
Reuenging *Nemeſis*, with ſhame repaie,
My fault, if euer my true loue decaie.

Cuſtophilus.

HEr lips(ſaith *Coridon*)are like the hue
That Cheries beare,by Natures ſecret skill:
Her breath as doth the Violet ſo blew,
The glowing aire with fragrant ſent doth fill.
And therefore *Coridon* accurſed be,
When from his ſweet ſaint *Phillis* he doth glie.

Eromaus.

IN beautie like *Alexis* he is fam'd,
(Quoth *Phillis*:) like to *Paris* for his pace:
When he in *Ida*, beauties iudge was nam'd,
And for the faireſt,deemed *Venus* face.
But did not he poore *Oenone* forſake?
That fault my *Coridon* will neuer make.

Cuſtophilus.

TH' Antarctick pole ioyne to the Arctick maye,
(Quoth *Coridon*)and ſtars fall out the skie:
Yea and the ſilent dame of night,by day,
May runne her race,and take her courſe awrie.
But neuer ſhall that hapleſſe day be ſeene,
Wherein ſhall *Coridon* forſake his Queene.

Eromaus.

THe flames of *Aetna* flaſhing on the maine,
(Quoth *Phillis*)may in tract of time be turned:
In powring ſhewers of neuer ceaſing raine,
And th'*Ocean* into aſhes may be burned.
But neuer ſhall that luckleſſe houre come,
That *Phillis* ſhall diſdaine her *Coridon*.

Cuſtophilus.

EArſt could December, downe ſhall way the trees,
With ſommers frute, and cloath the earth with flowers:
Earſt Iuly ſhall let running riuers frees,
And deck with ſnow the tops of climing towers.
Yea death ſhall cloſe my life with dreadfull doome,
To *Phillis* ere diſloyall I become.

Eromaus.

THe husbandman with plough ſhall eare the skie,
And fiſhers wrap the ſeas in ſnaring net:
The byrds ſhall ſwim, and watry fiſhes flie,
Ere *Phillis* ſhall her *Coridon* forget.
And when the fatall dames haue ſtopt my breath,
My ſhadow ſhall him follow after death.

Cuſtophilus.

THus *Coridon* and *Phillis* paſs'd the time,
With vowing each to other loyaltie:
He could not blow his pipe, or rowle in rime,
But ſhe for verſe her cunning needs muſt trie.
And if he ceas'd to ſing, and gan to ſpeake,
Moſt wittily ſhe wiſt her mind to breake.

Eromaus.

BY this *Apollo* doth decline and fall,
He lights off from his ſteed to take his reſt:
And from the fields theſe louers gins to call,
Who ere they part a kiſſe or twaine muſt wreſt.
Therewith content, till morning leaue they take,
And with their ſheepe, each haſte doth homeward make.

When

When theſe ſhepheards had ended their Sonnet, Marcelio, Maffeo, Perierio, Iſmenia, and the Ladie Briſil, intending to riſe and paſſe on in their iourny, they heard a certaine Knight and a Ladie, thanke the ſhepheards for their muſicke. And becauſe they could not ſée what this Knight or Lady was, by reaſon of the thickneſſe of the hedge, they harkned to their talke. For the Knight turning himſelf towards the Lady, ſpake vnto her in this manner. But I pray you ſiſter, haue you euer heard in the Court or in any populous Citie, any muſicke that ſo delighted the ſences, and contented the minde, as this paſtorall fit, which theſe ſhepheards here haue beſtowed vpon vs? Certainly brother (quoth ſhe) theſe country ſongs being accõpanied with a certain kind of ſimplicitie and goodneſſe, pleaſe me far better then thoſe melodious tunes which are vſed in the courts or pallaces of kings & noble men, being moſt curiouſly compoſed, & artificially enterlaced with diuers new inuentiõs. And now we talke of this matter, I cannot forget that good time in which Marcelio making loue to our ſiſter Alcida, did vſe ſome euenings to plaie on his Lute, and ſung ſo ſwétly, that if Orpheus his muſick was agréeable vnto his, I maruell not though he moued ſtones & trées to ſolow him, & fetched Euridice from the duſkiſh groues of Tartarus. Ah Marcelio, Marcelio! Where art thou now? Nay where art thou Alcida? Ah moſt vnfortunate wretch that I am! Cõtinually doth Fortune offer me occaſion to remember ſomthing or other which may encreaſe my griefe, at ſuch time as I intend to recreate my ſelfe with ſome ſimple paſtimes.

Marcelio who was with the other louers on the other ſide of the hedge, hearing very attentiuely what talke the knight and the lady had, was aſtoniſhed to heare them name him, that he ſcarce beléeued ý he was the man they named: but began to imagin ý it was ſome other Marcelio & Alcida they ſpake off. But to be reſolued, he climed on a trée, & looking ouer ý hedge, eſpied ý it was Polydorus & Clenarde, brother & ſiſter to his Alcida. Wherof he was ſo glad, that he ran vnto them, and imbraced them both with teares, expreſſing his excéding ioy, ſéeing

ye

he could not vtter one word in a long while, he was so sodeinly surprised with gladnesse. Polydor and Clenarde maruelled greatly what this might meane; for because Marcelio was apparrelled like a shephcard, they knew him not, till such time that his sobs and teares permitted him to vtter these spæches. Ah brother of my heart, now do I not care for my misfortune, seeing that I am so happie as to see thee. But what is not Alcida by thee? Dy doth she perhaps hide her selfe in some secret place of the groue? I beseech thee to let me know some newes of her, if thou knowest any, and deliuer me from the torment which I suffer. Herewith Polydor and his sister knew Marcelio, and imbracing him said.

O most blessed day! O most happie houre! Ah brother to our soule, what cruell disaster hath bene cause that thou art depriued of the company of Alcida, and vs of her presence? Why doest thou march thus disguised? Why doest thou weare such counterfeyt apparell? Ah cruell Fortune! It is most certaine that there is no perfect content in any thing whatsoeuer.

On the other side, Maffeo, with the other louers, seeing that Marcelio had so luckely met with Polydor and Clenarde, were verie glad, and so they marched all togither toward the temple of Diana. And by that time that they had gone two leagues, the Sunne being at the highest, forced them to take the shadow of certaine trees that grew about a pleasant fountaine. Where they all sate downe, and washing their handes in the christalline water that issued out of the fountaine, each one setting by such prouision as they had brought with them, they refreshed themselues; and hauing satisfied their hunger, after that Marcelio had told Polydor and Clenarde what fortune he had after his departure from them, he desired Polydor to let him know what aduenture he had had, sithence that time that he left him with old Eugerio in the shippe, when he with Alcida and Clenarde leaped in the ship boat, and so were separated from their sight by the tempestuous waues; thinking sure that they had miserably perished with that vnfortunate ship. Whereupon Polydor began thus to rehearse how he and

his

his father escaped the daunger of the sea; vsing as much breuitie as he possibly could, because he thought it would be troublesome to the rest of the company to heare matters that were full of sorrow recited.

After that, I was hindred by the Pylot and the Marriner (quoth Polydor) when I had prepared my selfe to leape into the ship boate with my father; in so much that we compelled to remaine in that vnfortunate and dangerous ship; our aged father was so distressed, as we may suppose that a louing father may be, who in the latter end of his old age seeth both his one life and his deare children also, in such present danger. He did not greatly complaine of the waues that battered the sankes of the ship, neither did he regard the boisterous winds that besought our vessell of all sides; but when he beheld the boat in which you were with Alcida and Clenarde, (which seemed at euerie moment to be ouerwhelmed and drowned in the rising waues, which seemed to flee ouer ỹ boat) he thought that his heart was pulled out of his belly; and when you were separated from vs, that we could not see you any more, he was so greeued, that I feared least he should haue presently died.

The ship being led by Fortunes will, went astray vp and downe the sea for the space of fiue daies after we had lost the sight of the boat, at the end of which space, Phœbus being neere his Westren home, we found our selues to be in sight of land. Whereof the Marriners reioyced maruellously, as much for that they had recouered the hope which they had altogither lost and giuen ouer, as for that they knew in what coast they were arriued. For the land which they saw was the pleasantest countrey, and the most delectablest place that the Sunne penetrated with his beames; abounding with all kinde of delight and pleasure. In so much that one of the Marriners began thus to crie out. O blessed and happie land of *Valentia*, receiue those, which the sea being irrited & prouoked to ire, doth vexe and afflict. Happie are they that being out of danger to be swallowed vp by the greedie waues, enioy thy fertilitie, and the meekenesse of thy aire! With far more labour doth the ship

 eare

eare the ſea then the labourer doth thy fields. O fauourable land, befoze the ſea become moze enraged againſt vs, receiue vs into thy pleaſant boſome, ſeeing we are almoſt ſpoyled and foꝛlozne; and thou ſhalt do as much foꝛ vs as he that ſaueth anothers life. Receiue vs I ſay, O beautifull country of *Valentia*, that we hauing once ſet foote on land, neuer returne to ſea againe.

By theſe wozdes of the Marriner, we gathered that we were neere *Valentia*, which country is famous thꝛough all the wozld. But while the Marriner thus called to the mercileſſe land, the ſhip being dꝛiuen with a furious winde, arriued ſo neere the land, that if we had not wanted the boate, we might haue reached vnto it. Neuertheleſſe, certain fiſhermen fiſhing not far from vs, and ſeeing our maſt rent, our anchoꝛ loſt, our ſailes tozne, and our ſhip pitifully battered, perceiued in what extremitie we were. Therefoze with all ſpeede they came to ſuccour vs, and with much trouble they fetched vs out of the ſhippe and ledde vs to land. The ioy which we conceiued thereof, was ſuch as euerie man may and ought to imagine. Eugerio and I, we thanked the fiſhers foꝛ their helpe, in that our great neceſſitie, accoꝛding to our dutie. But they as men of a good and ſimple heart, by nature pittifull, regarded not our thankes, noꝛ would take any reward at our hand foꝛ their paines, one of them making vs this anſwere. Sirs, thanke vs not foꝛ this deede, foꝛ you ſhall knowe that we are bounde to ſuccour and helpe all men that are in like neceſſitie, and therefoze take our readineſſe and good will in good part, which foꝛceth vs to do good vnto all men, whoſe extremities want our aide. And perſwade your ſelues, that as often as ſuch occaſion ſhall be offered as this, we will do the like, although we ſhould thereby hazard our liues, and intrude our ſelues into daunger. Foꝛ this moꝛning happened ſuch a chance, that if we had not remedied the ſame as we now haue done this, we had bene gꝛeeued therewith all the daies of our life. The chance was this. At the point of the day we went out of our lodges with our nettes, and our other oꝛdinary pꝛeparations

to

to fish withall: and before we came to the sea side, we saw that the aire was ouercast with a darke myst, and heard that the sea raged by reason of the boysterous windes which blew verie ruthly, in so much that we were twise of opinion to return home againe, fearing to commit our selues to the dangerous streames, in such a malicious and perilous time. But some of vs thought good that we should go to the shore side to see whether the tempest would slacken and the weather change. For it happeneth sometimes, that after a great tempest the weather changeth on the sodeine, and spreadeth a calme ouer the whole sea. But as we came to the sea side, we espied a great boate so shaked with the winde, and bruzed with the waues, without mast, sailes, oares, and all other seafaring instruments, that vnlesse this had bene neere the shore, they could not haue escaped present death: to be short, they were in the very same case that you euen now were. We moued to compassion, without regarding the perill vnto which we submitted our selues, presently leaped all into one of our shippes, and with all spæde rowed towardes those forlorne persons. When we were so neere them, that we might see them that were in the boat, we espied a yong Ladie, whose face was couered with teares, and her cheekes so blubbered with the water that issued out of her eyes, that it would haue moued a tygre to pittie. Which Ladie, assone as she perceiued vs rowing towardes her, expected our comming, with her armes stretched, and said vnto vs. Ah brothers, I beseech you to deliuer me from this imminent danger which Fortune menaceth vs presently, & more earnestly doe I beseech you to deliuer me from the power of this traitor which is by me, who against all reason and equitie keepeth me prisoner, and most villanously offereth to force and violate my chastitie. When we had vnderstood that, with all spæd & diligence that we could, (and that not without great danger) we pulled them out of their boat, & setting them aboard on our ship, we brought them to the shore: where she told vnto vs all the vilany of the traitrous marriner that was with her, how he had abused her & her sister, w̄ a certain gentlemā allied

vnto her, which would be long to rehearse. But we haue exempted her from the villaines, & led her to our lodging, where she is yet with our wiues and daughters, out of all danger to fall in the hands of those malicious and dishonest caitiffes that were in the boate with her; whome we haue cast into prison not farre hence, where we will cause them shortly to be punished & chastised according to their deserts. Seeing then that such an euent happened, (as in like maner more may happen) who is there of vs all that would not, nay that ought not willingly to hazard their liues in like danger, to recouer the welfare of those that are lost, and to do good vnto those that are abused and afflicted? When Eugerio my father heard the fisher say so, he thought (as I also did) that ỹ same yong Lady might haue bene one of his daughters; and although the fisher could not tell vs her name, we hoped neuertheless shortly to be resolued of our doubt, by reason that the Ladie was not farre of, and that the fisher did lead vs vnto his house where she was; that we might there take our rest. As we came neer the house, we heard the women sing that were within, and we so longed to see the Ladie, that we could scarce reach to the house in time inough to know what she was. But entring into the lodging, the fishers wife with her daughters and her maydes, marualling to see what new guestes came thither, they all held their peace, and left their song: and among them did we see the damosell whereof the fisher had spoken, whom we incontinently knew, and were of her knowne: for it was my sister Clenarde, who is here present at this time, and may tell you how she fared after that she was separated from you, by meanes of the traitour Bartophamus: and how she came so luckely vnto that selfesame place where both she and we were saued, by the help of those pittifull and curtuous fishers. But when we had heard of the treason of the same villaine Bartophamus, of the necessitie of Alcida, and of your captiuitie, I leaue it to your discretion to cõsider how grieued we were, as Clenarde my sister well perceiued, & may witnesse. For the ioy of our arriuall to land, and deliuery out of that present danger, was turned into mourning,

ning, all our pleasure into griefe, and all our comfort into dispaire. In so much, that the fisher seeing how pitifully we were greeued and afflicted, for the mishap of Alcida and your selfe, he comforted vs as much as laie in him, and told vs of a certaine Lady called Felicia, bearing rule ouer the temple of Diana, saying that she had such infinit knowledge and wisedom, that she could remedie our euill by telling vs what was become either of Alcida or your selfe, whereof we were verie glad: for that was the chiefest thing that we desired to know. Wherefore we resting there that night, assone as Phœbus had saluted the fishers cottage we rose, and thanking the fisher and his wife for their inestimable goodnesse and friendship towards vs, and rewarding them according to our power, wee departed betimes in the morning, leauing the Marriners there. To be short, we marched, Eugerio, Clenarde, and I, til we reached vnto the temple of Diana, where we saw the pallace, where the wise Ladie Felicia holdeth her residence. We beheld the magnificent building both of the place and of the temple, we sawe the most pleasant gardens, the sumptuous towers, the most wise and discrete Ladie, and many other things that haue so suspended our minds with admiration and maruell, that I am not able to make rehearsall according thereof. We saw in like maner the most excellent and beautifull nymphs that attend on the Lady Felicia; and many other shepheards both men and mayds, with diuerse Knights, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, that were come thither to haue their harmes remedied by the sage Felicia, who had giuen them great comfort in their loue and necessitie. But as concerning vs, the ayd and helpe which she hath done vs vntill this present, is, that she hath kept our father Eugerio by her, willing vs to goe vnto these quarters, and not returne vntill we had occasion to be better cõtented. And for as much as we haue receiued no small contentment and ioy of your life and presence, me thinke we haue sufficient occasion offered vs to returne to the sage Felicia, especially seeing we haue in her company left our aged father all alone and desolate, among strangers. I know that it

importeth greatly for his comfort, that we should find out our sister Alcida. But seeing that Fortune in so long time hath barred vs from vnderstanding where she is, or hearing any thing of her, I thinke it conuenient that we depriue not our father any longer of our company and presence.

After Polydor had ended his discourse, all the companie maruelling at the straungenesse of his and Clenardes aduentures, comforted Marcelio, who wept bitterly for Alcides sake: and assoone as his teares would permit him, he recounted vnto Polydor and Clenarde, what had happened vnto him since he saw them last. But Ismenia with the Lady Brisil, Perierio and Maffeo, hauing heard the report that Polydor made of the sage Ladie Felicia, were pricked with a greedie desire to arriue to the temple of Diana; partly because they wished to see that famous Lady, & partly for that they gathered by the praise which Polydor gaue her, for her discretiõ & wisdom, ỹ they shuld haue occasion to hope for the redresse & remedy of their harmes. For they were in great hope, ỹ some of them whom they so diligẽtly and painfully sought for, either were already among those gentlemen, damosels, & shepheards, which Polydor said that he had seen with the Lady Felicia, or should be ere long, by means of the said Ladies singular wisedome and experience.

The Sun by this time began to fall in the Western plains, and thereby was not so hote but that Polydor thought good to march forward, ỹ they might in good time reach to the pallace of the Lady Felicia. Which liking all the company, they rose all & went on their iourny. They had not gone passing a league and a half, but they met a certain nymph, whom the Lady Felicia foreknowing the comming of this worthy companie had sent, to let them know of certain things which she would haue them acquainted with before they came vnto her, to the ende that all things might succæd according as she through her incredible wisdom thought conuenient. Marcelio therfore with the rest of his company, comming to ỹ place where the nymp' was, saluted her very curtuously, as she likewise did him & all the other ỹ were by him, & asked thẽ whither they were going:

whereunto

whereunto they answerd, that they went towards the temple of Diana. She hearing that, said; For as much as I can gather by the valour & worthinesse of your persons, I beleeue ỹ Ladie Felicia of whose nymphs I am one) wil be very glad of your cõpany. And seeing ỹ Phœbus doth now begin to prepare for his euening lodging, & the day draweth to an end, I will returne home with you, for I am assured ye shalbe receiued with great triumph. They thanked her greatly ỹ she would kẽp thẽ company, & went on with her towards the temple. For they cõceiued marueilous hope by her words; & although Polydor & Clenarde had bin in ỹ pallace before, yet they remembred not that they had seene her among ỹ other nymphs, by reason of ỹ multitude of ỹ nymps of the lady Felicia, who all of them obeying the commandement of their sage lady, are imploied in sundrie charges & diuerse places. So ỹ Polydor asked this nymph how she was called, whereupon she answered, her name was Arethea. Clenarde demanded, what newes was in the ladies pallace: She answered, ỹ the cheefest newes she knew was, ỹ two houres before her departure from thence, there arriued a yong lady in the habit of a shepheard, who being espied by an aged knight ỹ was at ỹ present with the Lady Felicia, was knowne to be his daughter: & that, for because she had a long time gone astray through most parts of the world, ỹ aged knight her father was so ioyfull of her arriuall, ỹ the rumor of that yong ladies Fortune was spread through all the vilages about ỹ temple of Diana. Marcelio listning attentiuely to these words, greedily desiring to know whether ỹ Ladie she spake of were his deare Alcida: could not but interrupt the nymphs as she ment to go forward in the relation of her newes, & so he asked her how ỹ aged knight was called. Unlesse my memorie faile me (answered the nymph; Arethea) he is called Eugerio, and his daughter is named Alcida. Wherwith Marcelio surprised with exceeding ioy, after he had a long time stood as if he had bene in a trance, at length burst out into these words. Ah most blessed troubles that take ende by so prosperous an aduenture! Ah Fortune, and as hée meant to haue gone forewarde,

he

he could not vtter one word more, but fel down on the ground wholly astonished. The Ladie Brisil, Ismenia, and Clenarde, flocked about him to incourage him, and did so much preuaile, that he came to himselfe againe. In the meane time, Polydor and Clenarde, were maruellous ioyfull at that newes, seeing that all their misfortunes should take end by the comming of their sister Alcida. Maffeo, Perierio, and the Lady Brisil, with Ismenia, were likewise glad for Marcelios sake, & hoped likewise, that as the Ladie Felicia had wrought his blisse, so she would likewise being moued with compassion of their miseries, redresse their griefe. Ismenia desirous to heare somethir of her husband Lexander, saide to Arethee, Faire Nymph was maruellously well contented, and receiued great ioy. heare of the general gladnesse that is in the Ladies pallace, by reason of the arriuall of the Lady Alcida: but yet I should conceiue more perfite pleasure, if it would please you to tell me what shepheard of account there is at this present in the pallace. Arethee answered, you shall finde diuerse shepheards of account, whose names I remember not, yet two or three I know aboue the rest. There is one shepheard called Petulca, of whom the Ladie Felicia maketh great account of, for his wit and chastitie. Besides, there is a shepheard called Philorenus, whose presence pleaseth the Lady Felicia as much. The Lady Brisil hearing Petulca named, marueled to know how he came thither, and to what end: and therfore asked the nymph, whether she knew the cause of his comming thither. The nymph answered, that as she remembred, he came to heare of a certain yong shepheard whom he somtime had loued in steed of a yong maid, vnder the name of Sybilla, he being apparelled in the habit of a shepheard, and dwelling with his wife, made all the world beleeue they were two sisters. And many other things which I cannot (quoth Arethee) now rehearse, shall you vnderstand of him, when you come to the pallace, cõcerning those two sisters, which I promise you are wonderfull straunge. Straunge they are in deed (quoth Brisil) if you knew all faire nymph. Verely I beleeue (quoth Arethee) that you are either tho

the ſhepheard Periander or his ſuppoſed ſiſter. Either of them indéed (quoth Briſil,) but my name is not Periander. I promiſe you (quoth Arethee) that my Ladie will be ſingularly glad when ſhe ſeeth you : for I haue heard her talke much of you, and your ſpouſe Periander.

Iſmenia although ſhe heard not that her beloued Lexander was among the other ſhepheards which Arethee had named, yet for that ſhe heard that the Lady Briſil had heard ſomthing concerning her matters, ſhe toke the more heart in her own cauſe, and was glad for the poore diſtreſſed Dutches ſake, oping that ſhe ſhould receiue comfort of the Ladie Felicia.

Maffeo & Perierio who had heard nothing of their Ladies, were neuertheleſſe of as good chéer as the reſt, hoping that whē they were come to the temple of Diana, they ſhould receiue as much comfort as any : but eſpecially Maffeo, becauſe the Ladie Felicia had written vnto him and Marcelio, as you haue heard before.

Now as this worthy company being conuoyed by Arethee the nymph, came into a faire large place which was before the gate of the pallace, they ſawe a moſt valiant Dame come out of the houſe, being apparelled in a blacke veluet gowne, with a large vaile of precious lawne ouer her head, accompanied with thrée beautiful nymphs, reſembling the ſtately goddeſſe Iuno, when ſhe went to intreate Æolus to diſturbe the ſeas, when Æneas ſailed towards *Latium*. Arethee eſpying her, aduertiſed all the companie that it was the Ladie Felicia and the thrée nymphs Doride, Cynthia, and Polydora. And approaching néere vnto her, fell downe to her féete and ſaluted her, as in like manner Marcelio with the reſt of his company did, in all ſubmiſſe and humble manner. Felicia ſéemed to be wonderfully pleaſant for their arriuall, and ſpake vnto them with a moſt chéerfull countenance, ſaying. Worthie Knights, Ladies, and notable ſhepheards, howbeit that the pleaſure which I take in this your preſence is great, yet that content which you ſhall reape by mine ſhalbe no leſſe. But foraſmuch as you are ouertrauelled by reaſon of your wearieſome iourny,

go now, take your reſt, and forget your ſorrowes; ſeeing that the one cannot be wanting vnto you in my houſe, and I am to take care for the other, by meanes of my ſkill. They thanked her moſt humbly, and finally toke their leaue of her; but ſhe cauſed Polydor and Clenarde to ſtaie with her, ſaying ſhe had ſomething to ſay vnto them: but the others were ledde by Arethee, to a ſide place place of the palace where they were feaſted that night, and prouided of all things neceſſarie for their cherifhment and reſt. This houſe was ſo ſumptuous and magnificent, garniſhed with ſuch rich moueables, and beautified with ſuch pleaſaunt and delightfull gardeines, orchards, riuers and fountaines, that there is nothing comparable to the excellencie thereof.

Marcelio, Maffeo, Perierio, with Iſmenia and the Ladie Briſil, were lodged in that part of the pallace, which abutted vpon the gardeine, in ſundrie chambers being hanged with cloth of gold and moſt pretious tapiſtrie wrought with admirable cunning. Supper was prepared for them moſt magnificently, and it was ſerued vp vnto them in veſſels of golde and chriſtall. And when the night was approached and bed time at hand, they were laid on ſuch good and eaſie beds, that how be it their bodies were wearied by trauell, yet the ſoftneſſe of the delicate downe, with the hope which Felicia had giuen them, prouoked them to a moſt pleaſant and ſweet ſléep. On the other ſide, the Ladie Felicia with Polydor and Clenarde, (whome ſhe willed to make no menton of the arriuall of Marcelio and the reſt of his companie) went into one of her moſt pleaſant gardeines, where Eugerio walked alone, his daughter Alcida onely being by him: who although ſhe yet had on the ſame ſhepheardlike apparell that ſhe did weare at her firſt comming there, neuertheleſſe was incontinently knowne of her brother and ſiſter, Polydor and Clanarde. It were impoſſible for me to expreſſe the ioy which olde Eugerio made for the happie méeting of all his children whome he ſo déerly loued, imbracing them one after the other, & welcoming Polydor and Clenarde with flouds of teares flowing out

of

of his aged eyes. Alcida greatly welcommed Polydore her brother, and Clenarde her sister, but farre more affectionately cherished him then Clenarde, imagining that she had purposely gone away with Marcelio, and left her alone and distressed in the desart and solitarie Isle of *Formentera*, as you haue heard before.

But the Ladie Felicia intending to vnfold these errours and make the cause thereof knowne vnto Alcida, desiring to end their wonderfull misfortunes, and restore them to the blessed estate they were in before they committed themselues to cruell Neptune, to saile towardes the hauen of *Lysbone*, there to celebrate the concluded marriage, in presence of the *Lusitan* King their soueraigne; she spake vnto Alcida in this maner.

Most noble and beautifull Alcida, notwithstanding that Fortune hath bene so great an enemie vnto you in afflicting you with so many troubles and vexations, yet cannot you deny, but that by reason of the great content which you now enioy, you are fully reuenged of the iniurie which she hath hitherto don you. And for as much as the errour which you haue liued in vntill this present day, without cause abhorring your Marcelio, is sufficient (if you yet hold the same opinion) to alter your heart, and to breed his excéding misery; it is necessary that I should declare vnto you, how that you are terriblie deceiued if you be of that opinion. For the presumption which you haue of Marcelio, is quite contrarie and otherwise then you meane. For when you were left alone in the Isle, ỹ came not by his fault, but by the vilany of a certain traitor suborned by Fortune to aggrauate your mishap. Who to recompence the wrong which she hath offered you, hath direct your steps hither towardes me, in whose mouth you shall not find any other then truth. Your sister Clenarde shall largely tell you all that concerneth this matter, & how it wholly standeth. Marke well what she shall say vnto you, & giue credit to her words; for as for me, I sweare vnto you, that whatsoeuer she shall rehearse concerning this, shall be most certaine and veritable.

Whereupon presently Clenarde beganne to informe Alcida how all things had chanced, excusing Marcelio and her selfe, and largely declared the treason of Bartophamus, and all that which alreadie hath bene said touching the same. Alcida hauing verie attentiuely giuen eare to her sisters spæch, was wonderfully well contented to know the veritie and truth of the case, and as she did driue away and exclude her former errour and false opinion from her heart, so did she in like maner expell all such anger & hate, which she had vndeseruedly conceiued against Marcelio. Wherfore she now knowing the errour, and perceiuing that she wrongfully had giuen ouer the loue which in times past she had borne to Marcelio, the sparkles of loue that had so long bene raked vp in the ashes of obliuion, began to shew their force in her, and the affectiõ which had slæped thus long, began now to waken: Insomuch that she said vnto Felicia; Madame, I acknowledge my fault, and the singular pleasure which you haue done me in bringing me into the knowledge thereof. But being at this present time deliuered from that false opinion, and as well affectioned towardes Marcelio as euer I was; who for that he is now absent, if I may not enioy his company, I shall not obtaine the perfect ioy which I hoped to receiue by your meanes, nay rather shall I conceiue another griefe so excessiue and intollerable, that I shall be compelled to sue for new fauours at your graces hands, to remedie the same.

It is a manifest token of loue (answered ỹ Lady Felicia) to feare ỹ absence: but as for that, you shal haue no cause to care. The Sunne hath now drawen in his beames, it is time for you to retire, & to goe to your chambers to take your rest with your father and your sister; to morrow morning wil we talke of the rest. Therewith she went forth of the garden, and so did Eugerio with his daughters, and went to the place which Felicia had appointed for them: which was separated from that part where Marcelio with his company was lodged.

Assoone as Phœbus had harneised his stéedes to runne his wonted course, Eugerio, Polydor, Alcida, Clenarde, and other

gentlemen

gentlemen and shepsheards that were in the pallace at that time, met togither in the garden, where sitting by a fountain before the chambers where the Lady Brisil was lodged with Ismenia, Marcelio, Perierio and Maffeo, began one to play on the Lute, another on the Cithren, the third, on the Bandora, others on their Flutes, and some sung prick-song; insomuch that with their Musicke they awaked the Lady Brisil, who called Ismenia, & she knocked vp Perierio & the other knights that laie in the chambers aboue her. Who all of them leaning in their windowes, although they might not see all those that sate at the fountaine, by reason of certaine lawrell trees that grew about it, yet because it was so neare to their chambers, they could heare all what they said. They therfore listned verie attentiuely each of them, Maffeo whether he might heare the voice of Eleonora, (for he hoped greatly that as the Lady Felicia had written vnto him as well as vnto Marcelio, that therefore in like manner, Eleonora should haue bene arriued at the pallace as well as Alcida; notwithstanding that the nymph Arethee had not made any mention of her,) and Marcelio, whether he might heare his Alcida. As for Perierio he could not hope to see the Lady whom he loued, and therefore was more sad then the rest, & loked out at the window more to forget his phantasies by the pleasant musicke of those that were in the gar[illegible], & to passe the time in beholding the beautie of diuerse Ladies and shepheards which were there. The Ladie Brisil harkened whether Petulca the shepheard sung, to know whether he had heard any thing of Periander. But Ismenia being sorely discomforted because Arethee the nymph had not named Lexander, when she asked what shepheards were in the pallace, thought sure that he was not among them that were by the fountaine: but she had better lucke then she wist of. For incontinently she heard a shepheard, who sitting alone, after he had sounded his Corne-muse, beganne thus to complaine to himselfe.

Sonnet.

Vroras lookes expell the duskiſh night,
And after darkneſſe doth the day enſue:
When Nymphs to field, make haſt for their delight,
And byrds do ſcale the aire of ſable hue.
But t'endure a neuer ending night,
Sith no day may my grieued heart delight.

For neither can *Auroras* ioyfull face,
Nor tune of byrds, that ſing for mans reliefe:
Out of my heart the night of ſorrow race,
Or driue away, the darkneſſe of my griefe.
Yet nothing can my ſoule from ſighes releaſe,
Nor yet my voice from dolfull accents ceaſe.

Ah mirth-leſſe flowers, ſith ſhe is loſt and gonne,
Whoſe beautie your *Aurora* doth ſurpaſſe:
Abate your pride and wither in the Sunne,
Whoſe harmefull beames do ſcorch the fainting graſſe.
For ſince that beautie which I here declare
Is your *Aurora* but a night of care.

Iſmenia hearing him ſing out of her chamber windowe, knewe that it was Lexanders voice, whereof ſhe was gladde, though ſorrowe to heare him ſo grëeuouſly complain, thinkin that he ſo bewailed the abſence of ſome other, and not for loue of her ſelfe. But ſhe was ſoone deliuered from that ſuſpition, for after he had ended his Sonnet, hee burſt out into theſe words, with a moſt pitifull ſigh.

Ah poore ſoule! what an high offence haſt thou committed, to beléeue ſuch falſe accuſations againſt thy ſwéete Iſmenia, who honoureth thée aboue all wightes in the worlde; whereas thou leaſt doeſt deſerue it at her hands? And therefore doeſt thou worthily ſuffer the torment which thy lightneſſe

neſſe and credulitie hath procured thée. Ah my déere Iſmenia, how much better had it bin that thou hadſt not taken ỹ paines to courſe the world like a forlorne wight to ſéeke after thy vnworthie Lexander; ỹ he now acknowledging his fault, might returne home to his houſe and there finde thée. Ah traitreſſe Silueria, and was this the beſt reward thou couldeſt affoord me for the great pleaſure & ſeruice I haue done thée ſithence thy childhood? Yet I would account it a benefit that thou haſt enformed me of thy horrible treaſon, if thou hadſt come in time; for ſéeing thou haſt ſtaied ſo long, thy aduertiſement hath ſerued to no end but to increaſe my griefe, and multiply my ſorrowes.

When Iſmenia had heard that, ſhe thought it time to thank the Gods for her fortune, and to giue ouer all care and griefe. Marcelio, Maffeo, Perierio, and Duches Briſil, were glad for her ſake, and ſéeing that ſo by little and little, their companie was comforted, they were ſo encouraged, that they doubted not but ỹ they ſhould all obtaine their wiſhed deſires in time: iudging that the Ladie Felicia was the onely patroneſſe that could redreſſe the ſorrowes of all ſuch true amourts as were afflicted by reaſon of their ſincere loue.

In the meane time, Iſmenia was ſo tickled with deſire to enioy ỹ wiſhe. ompany of her Lexander, that ſhe had almoſt perticipated herſelfe out of the window, and ſo fallen downe headlong into ỹ garden where he was. But ſéeing ỹ her company hindred her from that vnhappie méeting, ſhe would haue preſently gone to the garden, had not Marcelio & the Duches Briſil exhorted her to ſtaie til ſhe knew the Lady Felicias pleaſure. Who ſéeing the day appeared, & the ſun began to glaunce through her windows, ſent Arethee the nymph vnto Marcelio and the reſt of his company. Therfore as Iſmenia was talking with Marcelio, of the great deſire ſhe had to be with Lexander, Arethee entring into the chamber where they were, & with a moſt curteous countenance ſaid vnto them. Noble gentlemen and faire ſhepheards, I beſeech God to ſend you ſo good happe and fortune as you deſerue. The ſage Ladie Felicia hath

ſent

ſent me hither, to know of you whether you haue reſted better this night then the nights before, and whether ye haue receiued more content then of cuſtome you are wont to do. Beſides alſo hath ſhe commanded me to lead you into the garden, whither ſhe will preſently come to ſpeake with you. But you Marcelio, muſt put on this ſute which the Lady hath ſent you, and put off your ſhepheards apparell; to the end that you may be cloathed according to your eſtate.

Iſmenia would not ſtaie till Marcelio ſpake, but her ſelfe returned this anſwer vnto the nymph, for ioy of the good new which ſhe brought. O bleſſed Nymph, what a good morning haue you giuen vs? How are we beholding vnto you? God will recompence the pleaſure which you haue done vs, ſeeing that our abilitie ſufficeth not. As for the content which we haue receiued this night, it is greater then I can declare, ſeeing that this morning we haue bene ſo happie as that I haue recouered my life, and theſe other gentlemen hope to obtaine the ſame. Wherfore to obey ſo worthie a Lady as ſage Felicia, we are readie to goe into the gardeine with you to knowe her pleaſure.

Then Arethee toke from another nymph that came with her, the coſtly and rich apparrell which the Ladie Felicia had ſent Marcelio to put on, and helped him to cloth himſelfe in that ſute which was wrought in pure gold & precious pearles moſt ſumptuous and brauely placed. Aſſone as he was apparelled, they went forth of the chamber and followed Arethee into the gardeine, where ſhe led them into an arbour, where they could not ſee thoſe that ſate at the fountaine; and taking the Ladie Briſil and Perierio by the hand, left Marcelio, Maffeo, and Iſmenia in the arbour, leading Perierio and the Dutches to the pallace, where ſhe left Perierio in a faire chamber vnder the bed-chamber of the Ladie Felicia, willing him there to expect the Ladies comming, and ſo mounting the marble ſtaires, led the Dutches vp to Felicias chamber, where the Ladie her ſelfe running to the dore, welcommed her in this ſort.

Moſt gracious Princeſſe, pardon me, for that I honoure you

you not yesterday according to your merit and estate, for that I as yet knew not the worthinesse & excellencie of your person. But this morning as I consulted in the temple of sacred Diana our soueraigne goddesse, concerning your case and of your companie, I was informed of the nobilitie of your stock, of the antiquitie of your house, of the perfections of your beautie and vertues of your minde, and of your loyaltie in the sacred lawes of sincere loue and chastitie. Know therefore most excellent Princesse, that the gods being moued with your incomparable vertue, haue sent you hither not only to inioy the loue of the beautifull and valorous yong prince Periander, but also to be hoysed to the top of perpetuall blisse, and to liue not thy selfe onely, but all the progenie that shall issue from thy frutefull worthie bodie, in such honour as no time, no misfortune, or nothing whatsoeuer shall be able to abate or diminish. In the meane time, till the gods send vs further knowledge concerning this affaire, encourage your self noble princesse, and giue ouer all care and griefe; let me take thought in your behalfe, and I promise you that I will not sleepe vpon the matter. But till occasion be offered that it may be put in practise, I shall desire you to take patience to lodge in this my simple and solitarie house, which though it be not comparable to the princely place of your bringing vp, I meane the famous Court of *Albion*, yet I doubt not but for the recreation, pleasure and content which you shall haue in my companie, you will thinke well of it, how soeuer you finde it farre inferiour to kingly pallaces, for the baseneſse of the building. Most heauenly Ladie, (answered the Dutches) what thankes I may yeeld you for your high deserts, I know not, and therfore perswade your selfe that I wish you as much recompence as a mortall heart may conceiue. As concerning my abode with you, I am readie to staie with you as long as you please, neither shall I thinke ill of the place, seeing that in magnificent building it surpasseth the stateliest pallace that I thinke may be in the world. But grant it were (as you say) inferiour to the meane Court of *Albion*, yet considering the excellencie of

your perſon, it may be iudged the moſt pleaſant and delectable place vnder the vale of heauen. If you like ſo well of my companie alreadie (replied the Ladie Felicia,) I hope you will increaſe your liking when you haue made triall of my readines to pleaſure you. But in the meane time, becauſe I muſt goe vnto the reſt of your companie that is in the gardeine, if it pleaſe you, put off your ſhepheards attire, and apparell your ſelfe with theſe robes, which though they be as precious and coſtly as euer was any that entred in my wardrobe, yet are they not ſo ſumptuous as your vertues deſerue. And for that you haue ſo chaſtly behaued your ſelfe, & as yet kept your virginitie inuiolated contrary to the opinion of all men, wheras you haue notwithſtanding ſo long kept ſecret companie with your louing Periander, reſeruing your virginitie, & cõſecrating the ſame to Diana, vntil ſuch times as your marriage rightes being celebrated, you may by the lawes of Hymenæus, giue an honorable adieu to virginitie, & enioy the frutes of your chaſt loue: I giue you this bunch of roſes which ſhal not wither in winter or fade in the ſommer, but in token of your chaſtity reſerue their natural vigor & freſh colour as long as you liue. As the Lady Felicia had ſo ſaid, whileſt her nymphs apparrelled the Duches, ſhe called Perierio by Arethee, & ſaluting him verie curtuouſly, told him ỹ ſhe had not bene leſſe mindful of him then of the other of his companie, that night. Therefore quoth ſhe, put on the cloathes that I will ſend thée, and ſtaie for my comming; as for all the reſt, diſburthen your ſelfe of all care, and let me alone: & ſo ſhe departed from Perierio, who went to the chamber where Arethee had led him, & incontinently eſpied Arethee comming with a faire ſute of black veluet as he was wont to weare before his father was exiled from *Venice*. Arethee hauing helped him to put on his cloaths, returned to the Lady Felicia, who ſéeing ỹ Duches Briſil was readie, ſet a moſt precious coronet vpon her head, on ỹ top whereof, ſhe put the bunch of roſes, & taking her by the hand, ſéeing Perierio alſo apparelled, bed him follow her into the garden. So ſhe went towards the fountain where aged Eugerio ſat with his daughters,

ters, Alcida & Clenarde, & his son Polydor, with other knights and shepheards, among whom the shepheard Petulca was, and Lexander also. And you must note, ỹ the Lady Felicia had also caused Alcida ỹ morning to leaue off her shepheards coat, and apparel her selfe in rich attire according to her estate, ỹ when she should meet with Marcelio (who now was in like maner most sumptuously apparelled) she shuld not be disfigured with base cloathes; though Alcida her selfe as yet knew nothing of Marcelios being there. As then Eugerio & the rest of those that sate at the fountaine, sawe the Ladie Felicia comming, being accompanied with so beautifull a princesse, maruelled greatly who ỹ same yong Lady should be; & euery one doing his obeysance to the Lady Felicia, & her company saluted her most humbly, as she likewise with Brisil, & Perierio did thẽ. The duches séeing Alcida, wõdred at her beautie, as likewise Alcida did at her. For by reason ỹ she was so sumptuously & richly apparelled, her beautie which surpassed all gentlewomen of her time, séemed rather to be heauenly then mortall. And though Polydor and Clenarde, had séene her the day before, yea and gone two or thrée leagues in her companie, yet the chaunge of her attire so altered her, that they as yet knew not that she was the Ladie Brisil, whose beautie was iniuried with that base shepheardlike attire. But Felicia calling Alcida and the shepheard Lexander vnto her, went toward the place where Marcelio and Ismenia with Maffeo, staied for her comming. They séeing her come, as they maruelled at the supernatural beautie of the Dutches, which had thus long bene shadowed vnder a rusticke habit, so were they exceeding merry to sée her so well accompanied to their ioy and comfort. For Marcelio sawe his Alcida of one side of her. And Ismenia sawe her Lexander on the other side. You may also imagine what a sodaine ioy Alcida conceiued to sée her beloued Marcelio, and Lexander to sée his deare Ismenia, whose absence he but one houre before, so pittifully lamented.

After that Marcelio, Ismenia, and Maffeo, had humbly sa-luted Felicia, and imbraced, Marcelio his Alcida, & Ismenia her

Lexander, the Lady Felicia left the Duches and Perierio there with them, and calling Maffeo vnto her, ſaid. Moſt valiant Knight, thou̅gh the gods haue not as yet gladded you with the ſight of her whom you ſéeke, in ſuch maner as the reſt of your companie; yet let me intreate you to be of as good cheare as theſe, ſéeing the ioy which they haue had, or is yet preſent, is to come and future vnto you. You ſhall haue no worſe entertainment then you haue had hitherto, therfore if that like you, I pray you ſtaie with me till you heare more tidings of your beloued ſpouſe, and let me care for the reſt.

Gratious Lady (quoth Maffeo) ſéeing I cannot giue you acquittance for your great deſerts, I can do no leſſe then reſt your ſeruant for euer, readie to do your Ladiſhip pleaſure at all times, though with hazard of my life. As concerning my wife Eleonora, I doubt not of her preſence before long, ſéeing your Ladiſhip willeth me to leaue that care vnto your ſelfe. And therefore what you thinke good, I cannot but allow, and what you pleaſe to haue me doe, I will put in practiſe; being readie to go or ſtaie, to depart or to remaine; or any thing elſe whatſoeuer it may pleaſe you to preſcribe. Herewith Felicia taking her leaue, entred into her pallace again, leauing Maffeo, Perierio, and the Duches, by Marcelio with his Alcida; and Iſmenia, with her ſhepheard Lexander. And although Lexander and Iſmenia were but of baſe birth, yet were they indued with ſuch excellent conditions and quallities, that they might haue worthily complained of Fortune and Nature, that they had not allotted them nobilitie of race. Yet howſoeuer they were of low parents, they neuertheleſſe behaued themſelues ſo in the companie of gentlemen and gentlewomen, that they were beloued of all men, and none knew them but coueted to kéepe companie with them, were they of neuer ſo high eſtate. They then being in company with theſe excellent and famous perſonages, brought ouer the time with pleaſant parley vntil none, at which time the bell rung to dinner. The table being couered in the midſt of the garden vnder a pleaſant bower, the Ladie Felicia came thither with Eugerio, with his ſonne Polydor,

dor, and his daughter Clenarde; the shepheard Petulca, and Philorenus; where, after Marcelio had imbraced his father in law Eugerio, who was exceeding glad to see his sonne in law Marcelio; the Ladie Felicia taking princesse Brisil by the hand sate downe, and willed all the rest of the company to place themselues at the table. I will not here declare what Lordly cheere was made them, nor how magnificently they were serued by those beautifull nymphs, nor yet with what pretious and sumptuous vessels their meate was brought to the bord: but this wil I only say, that the beauty of the guests, the countenance of the Ladie president, the sight of the nymphes, the sweetnesse of the musicke, the delicatenesse of the fare, the pleasantnesse of the bower, the gainesse of the garden, & in a word, the incomparable excellencie of things there present, was sufficient with the penetrating force thereof to reuiue the senses euen of dead men, and quickening their spirites to make them liue againe.

There might you haue seene the Ladie welcome her guesse with such a pleasant countenance, that they toke more pleasure in beholding the same, then in tasting their meate: and the guests so curtuously returned her thanks, generally ouer the whole bord, that she had rather haue missed her cates then her companie. For she toke no small delight to see so many distressed persons by her meanes merily drink one to the other, as if they had neuer knowne of any sorrow or griefe. For the nature of that place is of such force & efficacie, that whosoeuer entred into it, was combred with no care.

Now did neither aged Eugerio remember ỹ crueltie wherwith Fortune danted him and his children on the sea, nor Alcida thinke of the Isle of *Formentera* where she was left alone, and in the rocke engraued her protestation, that she would neuer after fancie man again: nor Clenarde mention the treasons of Bartophanus against her and Marcelio. Now did Maffeo not dreame that his Eleonora was taken from him while he sleeped, nor that his cosin Syluestro deceiued him of his heredítie. Now did not Perierio sigh for the sight of the Lady that

wounded his heart with the ſtroake of loue in the wood; now did not Lexander and Iſmenia trouble their braine with the malicious ſubtiltie of their mother in lawe Feliſarde, and the traitreſſe Sylueria. To be ſhort, now did not the Duches Briſil, call to memorie the traitour Maſſicourt, the fortune telling in *Spaine*, nor the cunning deceit of Bergama, ſuborned by Malorena. Neither did Petulca now muſe on his loue Sybil, whom he ſo earneſtly woed, ſhe being but Sybil in counterfeyt diſſembling, *alias* called Periander, a man as fit to plaie the woer, as Petulca himſelfe. Neither did now Philorenus (the other ſhepheard that was there, and was named by the Nymph Arethee, vnto Iſmenia, being aſked what ſhepheards of account there were in the pallace, of which Philorenus, we ſhall haue occaſion to ſay more hereafter) complaine of his ill hap; nor any of all the other gentlemen or ſhepheares that were there, did bewaile or lament their miſfortunes. For the heauenly harmonie of the muſicke which diuerſe of the nymphs made when dinner was ſerued, ſome playing on the Bandora, ſome on the Virginall, ſome ſounding their Cornets, others their Corne-muſes, others their Harpes, others the Cithren, others the Lute, others the Gittren, others blowing their Flutes, others the Recorder, and diuerſe other inſtruments that would be too long to name, ſo rauiſhed their ſences, that they thinking themſelues to be in ſome earthly paradice, could not but be delighted, and barred euen from all thought and imagination of diſcontent.

The muſicke ended, the three cheefeſt Nymphs, Doride, Cynthia, and Polydora, ſung this Sonnet, to recreate their Ladies gueſts that ſate at the table.

Doride.

FLie cutting care to hollow caues,
flie from this ſacred place:
Flie griefe to vncouth groues, and let
vs pleaſing ioy imbrace.

No teares may torture now, no ſobs
may greeue, n or ſighs may vexe:
No wo may wound, no thought may threat,
nor ſorrow ma ke vs yex.

Our paine is paſt, our dolour done,
we ſaile with proſperous winde:
No paſſion now, nor trouble may
diſturbe our quiet minde.

Cynthia.

The ſea doth flow as well as ebbe,
and waues both mount and fall:
As ſtormie tempeſts do diſturbe,
ſo calmes do quiet all.

The ſommers ſunne produceth flowers,
which fragrant ſents do yeeld:
Though winter aire in ſnowie robes,
doth wrap the barren field.

The ſight of *Phœbus* lordly face
doth driue away the raine:
And *Titanes* as oft is full,
as ſhe is in the waine.

Polydora.

Let Furies fret, let *Charon* curſe,
let brawling *Cerberus* bawle:
Let *Rhadamanthus* rage, let *Pluto*
chafe, and *Minos* brawle.

Let all the fiends of *Acheron*
euen ſpet out all their ſpight.

They ſhall not marre the mirth we make,
by high *Dianas* might:
Which all thoſe that do ſoiourn in
this ſacred place, exempts
From helliſh harme, from wracking wo,
and Fortunes ſhrewd attempts.

The three Nymphs hauing ended the Sonnet, dinner was ended, the cloth taken vp, and the Ladie Felicia riſing with all her gueſtes, walked out of the bower into the other part of the garden, where ſhe called Maffeo vnder her, & ſpake vnto him in this maner. Worthie Knight, for that I know your chiefeſt bliſſe conſiſteth in the finding of your wife Eleonora, I meane by the help of the gods, and the eſpeciall fauour of Diana, to help you vnto your hearts deſire, with all the ſpeed that I may. And therefore ſeeing the ſame is brought to paſſe, the more happie you ſhall deeme your ſelfe, I will put my ſkill in practiſe out of hand. Wherefore incontinently may it pleaſe you to depart from me, & go to the place where you left your childe, and taking it thence returne to me againe with it, and let me care for your reſt. Maffeo yeelding the venerable dame ſingular thankes for all her fauours, humbly toke his leaue of her & al the company, and preſently departed from the pallace, taking his way toward the village where he left his yong Alonſo, after he loſt Eleonora in the high way while he ſleeped; where we will leaue him pacing in his iourny, and talke of thoſe that remained in the pallace with the Lady Felicia.

Maffeo being gone, the Ladie Felicia taking Perierio apart, led him into the pallace, and brought him into her ſtudie which was ſo eorned and beautified with ſundry volumes, that it ſeemed rather to be the libzarie of ſome graue Philoſopher, then the counting houſe of a Ladie. For there was no booke, no authour, no writer, that was in eſtimation at thoſe times, but the Ladie Felicia had him in her bibliothike. Now hauing Perierio there alone, ſhe thought it time to execute that which his deſtinies had appointed, and therfore ſaid vnto

him

Couragious Gentleman, although you haue not as yet tolde me one woꝛd touching the cauſe of your comming hither, yet I knowe it as well as you can tell me. Is it not to enioy the loue of a Ladie which you neuer ſaw but once? I expect no anſwere, foꝛ I knowe it is. And I pꝛay you tell me whether you are of that opinion yet oꝛ no? and whether you are conſtant in your loue, ready to vndertake any labour to obtaine the ſame? But ere you giue me an anſwere quaffe out this goblet, in token of your good will towards me that wiſh your hearts content.

Perierio taking the goblet, dꝛancke out the liquoꝛ that was in it chéerfully, which had ſuch vertue, that it toke away the memoꝛie of loue, how dæpe ſo euer it was roted in the hearts of moꝛtall creatures. Ye theꝛefoꝛe hauing taken his dꝛaft, anſwered thus. Moſt pꝛudent Lady, I am aſhamed that I am come hither vnto you, hauing, yea knowing no cauſe why I ſhould trouble your Ladiſhip; and vnleſſe I had receiued ſuch exceeding pleaſure in viewing your Ladiſhips moſte ſumptuous pallace, I ſhould be ſoꝛie that euer I left my aged father and louing ſiſters, ſoꝛowfull and mourning at home foꝛ my abſence. Well (quoth the Ladie Felicia) I am glad that my medicine hath taken ſo good effect. But I pꝛay you take one dꝛauth moꝛe at my requeſt, which ſhall not be of the ſame liquour as the other, but moꝛe fruitful: and though it be ſomthing moꝛe bitter in the taſte, it ſhal neuertheleſſe be far moꝛe ſwæter in operation then the other. Perierio taking the cup, dꝛancke the potion though with ſome difficultie, by reaſon of the ſternneſſe thereof, which was nothing ſo gentle as the foꝛmer potion of obliuion. But Felicia ſæing that he had couragiouſly foꝛced himſelfe to leaue nothing in the cup, wel done (quoth ſhe) foꝛ though the roꝛte of ſcience, knowledge and learning be bitter, yet are the flowers wꝰch it pꝛoduceth, moſt ſwæte and pleaſant. And as ſhe thus ſpake, ſhe perceiued that her ſecond potion had done no leſſe good then the firſt. Foꝛ it had not only ſharpened his wit, & grinded his vnderſtanding, being moꝛe apt to receiue the impꝛeſſion of learning, but ra-

uiſhed

nished him with such a desire to attaine to the knowledge of Philosophie (wherunder I comprehend all kind of learning) that his minde was quite chaunged from Venus to Minerua, and from Cupids Court to the mount Parnassus. In so much that he began to vnclose the clapses of Felicias volumes, and vntie the strings of her bookes, being spurred thereto with a feruent zeale to know the contentes thereof. Where we will leaue him talking with the Ladie about the liberall sciences, and such other matters concerning scholasticall parley, and speake of those whom we left in the garden. Where Marcelio and Alcida walked togither in one Ally, Ismenia with Lexander in another. Eugerio with his sonne Polydor & his daughter Clenarde, walked by the riuer which closed vp one ende of the garden. The shepheards Petulca and Philorenus, with the rest of the company, sat on a bed of camomil, and Duches Brisil walked alone in an arbour of roses: where the dye ỹ beautified her vermilion cheekes, stroue with the roses for superioritie in perfection of colour.

Thus walking alone, she espied the shepheard Petulca sitting among other shepheards, and desiring to knowe of him whether he came thither about Periander, as she had vnderstood of the nymph Arethee, she stepped by them, and saluting them, said.

Gentle shepheards, I hope you will not be displeased thogh I presse into your companie being not sent for, the rather because Petulca is one of my old acquaintance; and therefore I could do no lesse then greete him, as I would haue done ere this, if occasion had bene offered. Petulca (who though he had made earnest enquirie what this princesse was, had not yet learned that it was Brisil, sister to his deere Sybil,) maruelling at the Ladies words, [illegible]eing he knew her not, or neuer had seen her to his knowledge, [illegible]as so amazed, that he wist not what to say, which Philoren[illegible]arking, gaue her this answere. The displeasure madame, [illegible]at we conceiue by your comming is such, that we thinke our[illegible]ues honoured with your presence, and therefore ackno[illegible]e our selues beholding vnto

you,

you, in that you disdaine not of the vnworthy company of such simple shepheads as we be. As for the acquaintance which you say you haue hav with our friend Petulca, as we are altogither ignorant thereof, so doe wee not enuy at his lucke in that so gracious a Princesse as your selfe beareth a remembrance of him.

As Petulca thought to aske pardon for his vnmindfulnesse, & to excuse the weakenesse of his memorie in that he could not remember that he had in all his life time séene any Ladie comparable to her for her beautie or estate, much lesse to haue séen her, the Duches staied him saying. Well Petulca thy company thinketh thée happie that I beare memorie of thée; but I pray you vnhappie may I be thought to be, séeing that thou disdainest to know her, whom I thought you would not haue forgotten so soone. Is this the memorie you haue of me and my sister Sybil, whom you so déerly loued? Is this the remembrance you beare of cursed Malorena and dissembling Bergama, who for thy sake sought our ruine? Petulca amazed to heare her say this, and knowing her by her voyce to be the same Brisil that soiourned among the shepheards of his countrey. at length burst out into these words. Ah gracious Pzin-

the gods knowe that I haue not forgotten neither you nor Periander, who vnder the name of Sybil, in the habit of a shepheard, bearing title to be your sister, hath caused my grief, and forced me to vndertake this troublesome iourney, intending neuer to returne home till I haue found him, and letting him knowe thy treason and malicious dealing of Malorena and Bergama to exhort him to race out the false surmise and suspicion which he hath grounded in the bottome of his heart of your disloyaltie. For séeing that for my sake he hath bene so horribly abused and brought into that errour, I will hazard my life to restore him vnto his former estate againe, to the end that he may enioy you, and your selfe him. And maruell not Ladie, th[illegible] not your person, though I will remember your ac[illegible]; for as the sun is in respect of the le[illegible]star of the [illegible] rose in respect of the nettle,

the ienuper trée in reſpect of the thorn buſh, & the lordly chri-ſtall in reſpect of the baſe glaſſe, ſo is your Ladiſhip now in reſpect of the time that we were feaſted by ỹ diſſembling trai-treſſe Bergama, in her arbour. And therefore ſæing that I had not as yet vnderſtood (hauing enquired of the Ladie Felicias Nymphs of your calling) any other thing of you but that you were a certaine Princeſſe of *Albion*, and that we ſhould ſhort-ly heare of the cauſe of your comming, & more largely know the courſe of your fortune; I hope your grace will not thinke the worſe of me, who haue vowed my bodie and life to do ſer-uice vnto your louing Periander, what ſtate or calling ſo euer he be of. Thankes kind Petulca, (quoth the Duches) and per-ſuade thy ſelfe that I thinke no otherwiſe of thée then I did at any time. And to the end that thou maiſt vnderſtand the truth and veritie of all my troubles, and know what Periander is, and alſo what cauſed him to faine himſelfe to be my ſiſter, be-ing attired in ſhepheards attire, I will briefly and truly re-hearſe vnto thée in this good company of ſhepheardes (ſo I be not troubleſome vnto them) the whole ſtate of my fortune. But firſt I muſt intreate you to tell me how long you haue bene here, when you departed from the village, and what ſuc-ceſſe you haue had in your iourny.

Then may it pleaſe you to vnderſtand (quoth Petulca) that after the malicious traitreſſe Malorena had caſt her ſelfe into the riuer to take penance for her heinous offence, by her own appointment, the whole village was made acquainted her villany, deteſting her for her mallice, and maruelling at Periander and your ſelfe for your perfect loue, in maruellous maner mourning for his departure and your miſhap. Inſo-much that the chiefeſt of the village ſent for me to vnderſtand the truth of the whole matter: which when I had declared, they toke order with me that I ſhould ſpeake with you, and comfort you, letting you know what they had appointed to do in your behalfe. For this

all the country after Per

formed of all that had happe

d (make enquirie through

the end that he might be en-

the village concerning ma-

licious

le
you

ward
niſter hap, yet he how fait
ſeing that your loyaltie was knowne
trie. Whereupon I hauing firſt cauſe
as an inſtrument and helping cauſe of
baniſhed, vntill ſuch time as Periar
and conſented to haue her releaſed
ſelfe to my iourney, and hauing t two dai and two
nights, at laſt I arriued in a countrie houſe, where I was ve-
ry c tuouſly vſed by a certaine ſhepheard, who toke pleaſure
to talke with me concerning the cauſe of my comming, for
that he had himſelfe not paſſing eight yéere ſince, almoſt cour-
ſed ouer the world to ſeeke his wife, which was carried away
vpon a certaine time by a Duke that riding that way, cauſed
his men to take her with them, he being abroad in the field.
And that after he had taken ſo much paines, it was his lucke
at length to come to the temple of Diana, where the Ladie Fe-
licia dwelleth, who helped him to his wife againe. Therefore
the ſhepheard hauing entertained and feaſted me verie curtu-
ouſly & bountifully, ſet me into a waie which directly brought
me to this place, aſſuring me that I ſhould of this Lady be en-
formed of all matters concerning thoſe that I ſought for. As in

cit of ty ... will
all ſuch matters as before haue bene
n Periander. Who after he departed
e left Briſil, within one daies trauell
wherein after he had ſtraied vp and
ſeuen houres in the night, could
not find a... ...ty to ... at of the ſame deſart place. In
ſo much that being weery of trauell, he was forced to lie on the
ground among the wilde furzen buſhes and thornes to reſt
himſelfe, where he ſlept till morning, at which time awa-
king out of his ſléepe, he ſaw a certaine Albion Knight ſtand
before him, whom he knew very well, for he was his fathers
taſker, and was called ſir Pharelus; whereat Periander was
ſo amazed, that he could not tell what had befallen him, but
the Knight ſpake preſently in this maner.

Faire ſhepheard or nymph (for Periander had his womans
attire yet) whatſoeuer thou be, be not diſpleaſed ỹ I haue em-
boldned my ſelfe to preaſe ſo néere ỹ place where you ſlept, for
ſéeing that I was loth to wake you out of your ſound ſléep and
wiſhed to ſpeak with you, I thought beſt to ſtaie till you awa-
ked of your own accord. Therfore ſéeing you haue giuen ouer

your

you I beſeech you to ſhewe me what way I may take to
get o this huge wood in which I haue ſoꝛe againſt my wil
remain three daies, not finding any way ẏ leadeth out of the
ſame. Priander glad that ſir Pharelus knew him not, gaue him
this an re. Sir knight, I haue no reaſon to be diſpleaſed at
yo ẏ I my ſelf wold in the like caſe haue vſed as much
be any nymph, yet if I could pleaſure you & ſatiſfie
your demand, o the willinger do it, cõſidering ẏ I wold
think my ſelf beholding to him ẏ would ſhewe vs the way out
of this wood. For yeſterday about the decline of the ſun, did I
firſt enter into it, hauing traueled this way neuer beforꝛe: and
ſeeing I could not find ẏ way out againe hauing loſt my path,
the weerisommes of my iourny forced me to take my reſt. But
pray you ſir (if I may be ſobold) what lucke hath brought you
hither, for I perceiue by the ſtrangeneſſe of your apparel, that
you are of ſome countrey far off, ſeeing ẏ no gentlemen hereа-
bout are clothed after ſuch a faſhion. In truth (quoth Pharelus)
it was ill lucke ẏ brought me hither faire ſhepheard. For you
ſhal know ẏ I am a *Britain* borꝛn in the iſle of *Albion*, & left my
countrey by the command of our king, who being enformed by
letter frõ the king of *Spain*, that hiſſon ẏ yong prince of *Albion*
was broken out of priſon & fled (for he was impriſoned in *Siuil*
by his fathers command) ſent me into *Spaine*, to enquire after
him, & not to return till I had heard of him. But when I was
arriued in *Spaine*, I heard ẏ the king of *Spaines* daughter Flo-
rena went with him, or after him, but no man could tell me
whether ſhe were by him, or had not yet founde him, or what
way he was gone. Thus I haue trauelled vp & downe *Spaine*,
& haue not as yet diſcouered any more newes of him. In truth
(quoth Periander) I heard great talk in our vilage of the kings
daughter Florena, how ſhe was conueied out of the Court by
another kings ſonne (I know not of what countrey,) that was
impriſoned as you ſay by his owne fathers command, becauſe
he would be maried to a yong Duches whõ the king himſelfe
would haue to his wife. True (quoth Pharelus) but ẏ duthes a-
bout 3. or 4. dayes beforꝛe the appointed wedding day, ſecretly

fled

fled out of the countrie no man knoweth whither. T.) the king toke so greeuously, that partly for anger, partly grief, he kept his chamber sixe weekes, at the end of which time he receiued letters of the king of *Spaine*, in which he vnderstood of his sonnes flight, which newes almost set him beside his wits. For he had purposed to send Embassadors to S. his sonne, and to proclaime the Duches that was dead of England, and wife to his sonne Periander to whom he intended to resigne the title of the Crowne, and to marry him to the foresaid Duches, with whō he was promised many yeres before. Therefore seeing that Fortune so crossed him, fell into a greeuous and dangerous disease, insomuch that we doubted of his recouerie. But after he had kept his bed one fortnight, by the singular skil and industrie of the phisitions, he began to mend; and calling me one morning to his bed side, vttered these words vnto me. Ah Phi.lus, thou seest how pittifully your king hath bene vsed both by Fortune and heauen. For the Gods intending to reuenge my vnnaturall crueltie & barbarous tyrannie against my owne sonne, though I repented, yet would both barre me from my desire, and punish my offence. But now as I feele by the alteration of my weakenesse, that they haue slaked their vengeance, and pitie my case, so I hope Fortune will in like manner become more fauourable then she hath bene hitherto. You know how the Duches Brisil is fled, and no newes can be heard what is become of the poore Ladie. In like maner now is Periander also broken out of prison, and as a banished man runneth astraie, perhaps suffering a thousand miseries, and all for feare least he should fall into my hands, where alasse I would rather aske him forgiuenesse, then anie way preiudice him, seeing he hath no way offended me, but I greatly iniured him. And now for as much as the hold of my life consisteth in the hope which I haue to see both Periander and Brisil here in my Court; I haue caused thee to come hither, to declare my minde vnto thee concerning this matter, wherin I will imploy thy seruice, seeing I haue found thee faithfull & loyall in all matters which I euer committed

to

to thy truſt, not doubting but that I ſhall finde thée as readie now to do me pleaſure and atquite my ſelfe of your dutie, as I haue bene at otherſtimes. My pleaſure is, that thou make a voyage into *Spaine*, and paſſe ouer all that country to ſée whether you can heare of my ſonne Periander, to the ende that if you finde him, you may let him know how earneſtly I wiſh to ſée him, that he may come hither and receiue the Crown of the Kealme. And if it chance Duches Briſil be in thoſe partes (for it may be ſhe is with him or in trauell to ſéeke him) in ſo much that you méete with her, or heare of her, I would haue order taken, that ſhe notwithſtanding that Periander be not yet found, might returne to the Court to be crowned Queene; ſeeing that the Crowne by the law of the realme apperteineth vnto her after my death, being betrothed to my ſon, if he marry no other, as I know he will not. I wil ſend others to other countries, you ſhall onely ſéeke them in *Spaine*. I pray you to do all the diligence you can, and to behaue your ſelfe herein according to the opinion I beare of you. And for your reward if you finde either of them, I will promiſe you leſſe then I wil performe. And eſpecially this I will ſay before hand, that he that findeth and bringeth Periander and Briſil both, aſſone as they arriue at the Court, I will giue him the iſle *Mona* to be his and his heires for euer: and he that findeth either Periander or Briſil, I will giue him the gouernment of Weſt *Albion*. But as for you Pharelus, you ſhall receiue greater benefits at my hands if the Gods will fauour your iourney, yet what lucke ſoeuer you haue, I will not be mindfull of your labour and readineſſe.

Herewith the King weary by reaſon of his ſickneſſe, and ſcarce able to ſpeake more, ceaſed; and I thanking his Maieſtie for his ſingular fauour towards me, vowed to do whatſoeuer laie in me to the vttermoſt of my power, partly for my dutie towards him, and partly for the loue I beare the yong Prince. In ſo much that after we had fully concluded the matter, I departed from *Albion* the next day with twelue men; which I haue all ſent to ſundry places of this country, appoin-

ting them to meet all at the famous citie *Leon*, situated along the riuer Eyla, as the first day after to morrow, at which time I meane to be there by the helpe of the gods, to know what tidings they can bring me. Verily sir knight (quoth Periander) the kings sonne would wish to meete with you, if he knew the good tidings you bring him; I am greeued my selfe to heare that such great persons are subiect to so much aduersitie. But I pray faire shepheard (quoth Pharelus (seeing you say you haue heard talke of him in your village, to tell me where the same vilage is, and how it is called; for if I thought I might there heare any thing of him, I would take my iourney that way. Nore then I haue said (quoth Periander) shall you not heare there I promise you, and therfore seeing it is out of your way, take not the paines. And as they were thus talking togither, they espied an old man wandring through the wood so far from them that they could scarce see him by reason of the thicknesse of the bushes, and small trees that grew in the wood. But calling vnto him, he fearing least they had meant to do him some harme, began to run his way as fast as his old legs could carry him. But Pharelus with all celeritie followed him so long till he ouertooke him, at last at the wood end, hauing run an whole houre before he could come to him, ỹ old felow so bestirred his stumps, & seeing he could not out run him, he fell downe on his knees & asked for mercy, making a large apologie that he was a poore old man & had wife & children to keep, and many good morrowes; fearing that he should haue bene robbed by Pharelus: which he perceiuing, could not but laugh to see ỹ old man so timerous; and therefore said, Alacke good father, feare not, for though I perceiue by thy fearefulnesse that thou art well prouided of mony, yet I called thee not for thy wealth but for thy counsel; for I haue bene here in this wood these three daies and more, and cannot find any path to lead me out of the same. And though I perceiue that by following thee I haue atteined to that which I wished for, seeing I am here at the wood ende, yet I thought good to deliuer thee out of the opinion which thou conceiuest of me, who wish thee no harme. Neuerthe-

leſſe ſéeing I do not well know where I am, thou ſhalt do me a pleaſure to tell me what way I may beſt take towards the famous Cittie *Leon*. Ah good gentleman (anſwered the olde fellow) the cauſe that I ranne from you, was not for feare to loſe any treaſure, for I haue none; but I heard that there was a poore man ſlaine about fiue or ſix wéekes agoe in this wood, and ſéeing I knew you not, I hope you will not thinke the worſe of me though I was afeard of you. As concerning you requeſt, know, that I dwel in the ſame citie you enquire for, and if you daine to trauel in the company of ſuch an homely perſon as my ſelfe, by the helpe of the gods I will lead you thither before thrée dayes come to an ende. Willingly (quoth Pharelus) and I thanke thée for thy curteous offer, but there is a young ſhepheard that followed me as I ranne after thée, of whom I aſked the way, and alaſſe ſhe knew it as little as I, and I would be ſorie that we ſhould leaue her behinde vs; and therefore I praie thée to ſtaie here a little, and I will ſée whether I can eſpie her comming. But if you bee wiſe (quoth the olde man) goe not in to déepe, leaſt you loſe your way againe, it were beſt for you to call vnto her as loude as you can or to whiſtle, for if ſhe heare you ſhe will come, and if ſhe be out of hearing, you may chance to ſéeke after her as long as you haue alreadie bene in the wood. Pharelus followed his counſaile and whooped vnto her as loude as hee might; and ſéeing that ſhe came not, after he had remained there for the ſpace of two houres, the olde man being verie haſtie to goe on his iourney, hee woulde not ſtaie behinde, and omit that opportunitie, though loth, yet forced to leaue the ſhepheard, he went with the olde man. Periander on the other ſide, who for his womanlike ſhepheard attire, could not follow Pharelus when he ran after the old man, (for his long coat catched by the thornes and brambles) and hauing loſt the ſight of Pharelus, went quite another way; ſo that it was no marueil that he heard not Pharelus call vnto him. For he went quite contrary frō the path which Pharelus toke after the old man, and came out at the other end of the wood, where ſéeing

himselfe out of the troublesome forrest, was grieued that he had left Pharelus in that sort, before he had resolued whether he would reueale himselfe vnto him or no; but yet remembring that Pharelus saide he meant to be at *Leon* within fiue dayes, he was the gladder, seeing he knew where to find him, if he concluded to returne with him to *Albion*. In so much that sitting downe on a grein banke by the wood side, began in this maner to deliberate what he might do, bewailing the disloyaltie of Brisil.

Ah vnfortunate Periander, now maist thou well perceiue that Fortune hath sworne to be thy enemy for euer. For hath she not first suborned the traytor Massicourt to worke thy miserie, and so laide the foundation of all thy troubles? He being cut off and his villany detected, hath she not armed thy owne naturall father against thee, and stirred him vp to wrong thee of thy right? And now the gods being incensed and prouoked to wrath by such impiety, haue by their vengeance moued him to repent, hath she not battred the fort which I neuer thought she should haue bene able to incorporate? Ah Brisil, Brisil! neuer did I thinke that Fortune should haue triumphed of her victories in making conquest of the neerest thing that touched my heart, and that she should haue braued me with the trophees of thy disloyaltie. Ah how often was I wont to say vnto Fortune, when she threatned me to deprive me of honour, liuing, renowne, yea life and all, that none of all that was mine, thinking that I might claime nothing properly to be mine, but thy loue, faith, and loyaltie; not caring to lose the whole world so I might enioy thee, whom I thought that neither alteration of time, nor distance of place, nor mutation of manners, nor change of estate, nor any thing whatsoeuer either hell or Fortune might procure, could haue withdrawne from Periander. In her was my minde fired, my hope planted, and all my confidence seated, seeing therefore that Fortune hath bene able to make conquest of her, I am constrained to confesse and acknowledge that she can do what she will, and that we may not resist her pleasure.

In

In so much that I striue against the streame, & cast stones against the winde, in opposing my selfe against Fortune, seeing she hath vowed my vtter ruine, and will bring her will to passe. The ashes of the old Phœnix breedeth the new, and with me, the ende of one misfortune is the beginning of another. How can I then hope euer to enioy content, seeing I neuer had happie houre? If Fortune looketh on me, she lowreth; if she turne her face frō me, she threatneth me; if she remember me, she is enraged at me; and if she smileth, she flattereth: whether dissembling to wreake her anger & ingrafted spight against me whome she could neuer broke. Yet Periander how canst thou so greatly complaine of her, seeing that she so fauoureth thee; that thy father who was thy foe, is now become thy friend; thou that wert but a Kings sonne, art now when thou wilt a King; and where thou didst liue in imprisonment, in exile and miserie, maist now liue in Court, in libertie, and in all the pleasure of the worlde? No, no, fond fole, Fortune doth not this but the iust gods, and if she be any cause of it, she doth it only thereby to entice me to become as disloyall as Brisil, and so wholly to vanquish and ouercome me. But no, though I haue acknowledged her to be neuer so puissant, yet she shall not make conquest of my fidilitie, nor brag of my disloyaltie, seeing I will not, nor may giue ouer the loue of Brisil, and though she neglect and hate me, yet will I loue and honour her till death.

After Periander had thus lamented the losse of this loue of Brisil, he determined to go to the Cittie *Leon* to meete with sir Pharelus, and with him to returne to *Albion*, intending to liue there and enioy his fathers Crowne: but neuer to loue anie but Brisil, or to knit himselfe in marriage to any other. And resolued to take his iourney by the same village where he left Brisil, meaning to speake with Malorena, and to leaue a letter with her for Brisil, as he had done before: in which letter he purposed to let *Brisil* know of all that which he had learned of *Pharelus*, whom he found and lost in the wood. He intended also to write a letter vnto Petulca, & to let him know as much,

protesting that if he would come into *Albion* when he were crowned, he would giue him the Dukedome perteining vnto Brisil, in marriage with her, and do him all the honour that a Monarch might do to any of his Peeres; seeing that Brisil made such account of him. In this minde Periander returned secretly into the village where he had sojourned with Brisil, and chaunging his attire, apparrelled himselfe in mans cloathes according to his sexe and nature. And being come to the village, he toke his lodging in some shepheards house where he thought hee was least of all knowne. When hee had entered into the house and caused supper to be made readie, he asked one of the shepheards daughters, whether they knew not a certaine shepheard called Malorena (for he thought to haue spoken with her, and to knowe of her how Petulca and Brisil were moued at his departure, and to leaue the letters which he purposed to write with her, to deliuer them vnto Brisil and Petulca;) wherewith they were halfe angrie, thinking that he did it to haue occasion to speak ill of the maids and shepheards of their countrey, and therefore gaue him this answere. We knew her but too well, and if we thought you were one of her fauourits, you should haue but bad lodging heare. Pardon me (faire shepheardes replied Periander) if I offende against my knowledge, for the cause that I aske for her, is, that I am her cousin, and haue not seene her this great while. I, as yet haue neuer heard any ill of her, nor euer knew any thing by her but that she behaued her selfe as a mayd of her calling ought to do. Thereby (quoth the shepheards wife) we perceiue thee to be but a straunger here, and therefore to be excused; for as you say, she was famed to be one of the most modest maides of the whole country, but now of late she hath committed such villany against two of the loyalest louers that euer the world harboured. And thus the good wife declared the summe of ỹ whole matter vnto Periander, how all things were passed: which so altered his affections, that all they that were present could perceiue that he was moued thereby. Yet least he should bewray who he was, forced himselfe as much as he could to abstaine

ſtaine from ſighing or weeping till he was alone, at which time he powred forth whole floudes of teares out of his eyes, for griefe that he had ſhamefully ſuffered himſelfe to be deluded by Malorena, and thereby brought himſelfe into all theſe miſeries, where otherwiſe he ſhould haue bene the happieſt man that liued. Neuertheleſſe when he had heard what mone Briſil had made for his ſuddaine departure, and how that ſhe was gone to ſeeke him, he was ioyfull and glad, accounting more of her loue and loyaltie, then all other things whatſoeuer. Thus Periander both ſorie and glad, wiſt not what he might beſt do, to ſeeke for *Briſil*, or to go to Leon firſt, & ſpeake with Pharelus. But conſidering that it were a moſt vncertaine voyage and doubtfull labour to ſtraie after her, he concluded to goe to Pharelus firſt, and with all ſpeede to returne into *Albion*. Where after he were crowned King, he doubted not but that ſhe would come vnto him aſſoone as ſhe ſhould be informed thereof. Beſides, he purpoſed to ſend out ſo many to inquire after her, that in ſpight of Fortune he ſhould heare of her, or ſhe of him, eſpecially ſeeing ſhe ſought for him, which was the chiefeſt point that encouraged Periander.

He therefore hauing his head full of bees, and building caſtles in the ayre, ſlept a litle that night, and riſing betimes in the morning, toke leaue of the ſhepheard, paying and diſcharging that which could be aſked for his lodging and entertainment, departed towards the Cittie *Leon*, where he arriued two dayes after Pharelus.

Now, though he knew not where he might finde Pharelus, or how to enquire for him, yet he had ſuch lucke and fortune, that walking in the Market place, he eſpied Pharelus talking with one of the men whome hee had appointed to meete him there. Whereupon Periander ſtepping vnto him, ſaluted him verie curtuouſly, ſaying.

Sir Knight, the cauſe of my comming vnto you being vnknowne, is this. About two dayes ago, I met with a certaine ſhepheard, who told me ỹ ſhe vnderſtood of you, that you ſought for the King of *Albions* ſonne that was impriſoned in *Spaine*,

and

and breaking forth, ranne away as some say with the kings daughter, though others rather thinke without her. And for as much as I haue heard some certainty concerning this yong Prince where he is, and other matters touching a certaine Duches that should be his wife or alliance, I thought good to let you know as much as I haue heard. But if it will please you to go with me halfe a mile without the Citie, I will lead you into a shepheards house, where I doubt not but you shall vnderstand as much as shall content you, and serue to bring you vnto the thing you most wish for. Sir Pharelus hearing this yong man (as litle thinking that he should be Periander, as he did when he met him in the wood in womans apparrell) thanked him with a most pleasant countenance, reioycing extreamely for the hope he had to finde Periander; and presently without returning to his lodging, he went with him out of the Citie towards the place he spake of. Periander seeing sir Pharelus so merry for the newes he had brought him, and so ready to go with him, conceiued great ioy that he had so frendly a subiect; and leading him out of the Cittie, when he came into a close southing farre from any house, where hee thought he might speake safely and not be heard or seene of any man but sir Pharelus, who was only by him: (for he had left his man in the market place in the Citie, there to expect the comming of others that he loked for,) he thought good to reueale vnto sir Pharelus who he was, and therefore said thus. Pharelus, we haue now gone farre inough, I meane to go no further; and I thanke thee that thou hast done so much for mee as to come thus far with me; when I am King of *Albion* I will do more for thee. Pharelus amazed at those words, wist not what answer to giue him, and although at the first he thought he had mocked with him, saying, that he thanked him for comming so far with him, yet when he heard him speake of his being King of *Albion*, perceiued that it was Periander himself, for ioy whereof, he could scarce speake; but falling downe on his knees craued pardon of Periander for his ill remembrance. But Periander imbracing him, toke him vp by the hand and thanked him

for

for his loyall seruice, saying that he was so mindfull of him, that he should be beholding vnto him for euer. For (quoth he) how may I finde fault with thy remb3ance Pharelus, seeing thou daily takest such care about me, & sufferest so much toyle to seeke me. As for the outward remembrance which consisteth onely in the colour and fauour of the face, seeing the same is by continuance of time chaunged and altered, it is a hard matter to beare memory thereof, especially when it is estranged with vnacquainted and strange attire. Or else no doubt Pharelus, but you that thinke on me daily would haue knowne me, not only when I came to you in the market place of this Citie *Leon*, but also when you feared to wake me in the wood: where we were so straungely separated one from the other, I know not by what mischance, but that (the gods be thanked) it happened greatly to my comfort.

Herewith Periander informed Pharelus of all whatsoeuer had happened vnto him sithence his departure from *Spain*, and also of Brisils comming vnto him in the prison, her departure with him, their aboad, and manner of aboad among the shepheards; and lastly of Brisils last departure, greatly lamenting her absence, making great sorrow for her, that she now went a straie vp and downe through the vnknowne & solitarie places of that desart part of *Spaine* to seeke him. Pharelus glad to vnderstand the whole matter, though grieuously sorie for the Duches Brisils mishap, comforted Periander by all meanes he could, hoping by that they had bene in *Albion* but a moneth or twaine, they should heare of her.

When Periander and Pharelus had a long time talked of all matters concerning their return to *Albion*, they went back to the Citie againe, where they met with those whom Pharelus expected that day. Who being come according to his appointment, each told as much as he had heard concerning Periander, which was but little. Neuertheless he thanked them all for their diligence and industrie, telling them that he had better newes himselfe, and such newes that he minded to returne into *Albion*, where he doubted not but that he should

finde Periander, if the gods would be as fauourable as he hoped: but would leaue them to inquire & seeke for the Duches Brisil, who was somewhere in that part of *Spaine* where they were. The men glad to see their maister so frolicke and merry for the good newes he had heard, were passing glad, and promised that they would doe as much as laie in their power according to their dutie, and as they had alreadie done. But maruelling what yong man he was that stood by their master (for they had neuer seene Periander to their knowledge,) asked their maister whether that yong man had brought him those happy tydings. Pharelus vnwilling that they should know that he was Periander, tolde them that he was so, and that he would leade him into *Albion* with him, to the end that if his newes were true, he might reward him accordingly as he deserued.

But Pharelus speedily appointing them what way eache should take, willed them to make diligent search for her, assuring them that she was in those parts, and that the same yong man that was by him had seene her not long before, being apparelled like a shepheard and countrey mayde. Besides he charged them to tell her if they met her, what was passed in the Court of *Albion* before their departure, and that sithence she sawe Periander last, that he hath bene at the village where hee left her, and there bene informed of the deceitfulnesse of Bergama, of her owne faithfulnesse and loyaltie, and of all other matters concerning the traytresse Malorena; and that he is either in *Albion*, or shortly shall be where he will expect her comming. Herewith Pharelus dispatched them all; and leauing them each one to looke to his charge, presently repaired to his lodging with Periander, where they refreshed themselues being both hungrie and wearie. Their repast being taken, they toke directions for their readiest way towardes the hauen of *Lisbone*, intending there to take shippe. And so departing from *Leon*, they trauelled along the Riuer Ezla, leauing the village where Periander had sojourned with Brisil on the left hand. Where we will leaue them going on

their

their iourney and returne to Brisil, whome we left reheasing the historie of her life, to the shepheard Petulca and Philorenus, with the rest of their companie. For when Brisil had ended her tragedie, she said. Thus (shepheard) haue you heard the whole estate of my life, who I am, of whence, and of what Fortune. And for as much as it is not yet neare supper time, seeing we are so well mette, I praie you Philorenus (for so I heare you named) daine to make vs partakers of your fortune, that as I haue willingly made you acquainted with mine, so you will let vs know what happe you haue had, and what euent hath made you resort to the Ladie Felicia. For by reason that I heard something concerning your selfe, of the Nymph Arethee (who before I entered into the pallace) being by me and the rest of my company asked what shepheards of account were in the Ladie Felicias Court, named you among the rest, I am touched with an earnest desire to know the course of your life. Philorenus answered.

Most gratious Ladie, if I should do lesse then you demand, (seeing you may commaund) I might worthily be accounted both vndutifull and vngratefull. If therfore it will please you to giue attention to my speeche, I will as briefly as I may (not to be tedious vnto you) vnfolde the occasion of my trauell, and acquaint you with the straunge effects of my fortune euen from my childhood.

Brisil seeing Philorenus addresse himselfe to tell his tale, winked vnto Marcelio and Ismenia, who walked here with his Alcida, and she with her Lexander, and they being come vnto her, shee tolde them of Philorenus his intent, which they knowing, sate downe by Brisil and *Petulca*, with the other shepheards, making silence, least they should interrupt Philorenus his purpose, who beganne in this manner to satisfie their expectation.

I was borne in a little village called *Teruedra*, in the kingdome of *Aragon*; my parents were poore & of base linage, and leade their liues altogither in the Country, their name and kindered beeing of no honour or fame for nobilitie

of diſcent, though they were knowne and ſpoken of in places farre from them, through the whole kingdome of *Aragon* for their vertue & honeſtie. As Fortune had enriched them with many faire poſſeſſions, ſo nature had beautified their perſons with comelineſſe, and the gods indued their mindes with the heauenly influence of wiſedome, liberalitie, modeſtie, gentleneſſe, chaſtitie, & many other vertuous qualities, which made them famous aboue all their neighbours. But Fortune who continually enuieth the happe of thoſe that be moſt addicted to pietie, either willing to trie the perfection of their vertuous conſtitution, or rather intending to ouerthrow their honeſt diſpoſition, began to lowre and frowne on the good and luckie eſtate in which my father and mother liued, hauing ſtore of wealth & no other charge but me: I being about two or three yeares of age. For it happened that occaſion of warres and diſcord growing betweene the Kings of *Aragon* and *Caſtile*, both their Armies were encamped by our village, in ſo much that my parents and moſt of their neighbours, to auoyd the loſſe they were like to ſuſtaine by the incurſion of their enemies, thought beſt to leaue their countrey habitation till the time changed, and to ſoiourne in ſome of the next cities til the wars were ended. To bring which thing to paſſe, my father ſpedily trauelled towards the citie *Targonna*, there to prouide ſome houſe for his wife and him, there to expect the end of the preſent troubles; intending if he could find any conuenient place for his purpoſe, to returne home and fetch my mother and me with the reſt of the family. But within one day after his departure, it happened that the two Armies buckled togither, and the enemy becomming victorious, purſued our King that fled with all his nobilitie through our village to ſaue himſelfe in the foreſaid citie *Targonna*, ſeeing his Campe was diſcomfited, his cheefeſt Captaines ſlaine, and all his ſouldiers chaſed by the enemy & put to their ſhifts, hauing more hope in their heeles then in their hands. In ſo much that the whole Army of the King of *Aragon* ſwarming about our village as a company of bees, pilled and ſpoyled all the houſes and farmes, taking

the the chéefeſt farmers and huſband men for ther priſoners, ſetting them each one at ſuch a rate or ſumme of money for their ranſome, as they thought them able to paie, according to the ſubſtance and wealth which they iudged them to haue. In ſo much that one of their Captaines entering into our houſe and aſking for my father, the mayds anſwered that he was in the Citie, but he not beléeuing them, ranne into all corners of the houſe to ſée whether hee were not hidden in ſome ſecrete place, and as he raunged vp and downe through all the chambers, at length he found my mother lying vnder one of ỹ ſhepheards beds, and pulling her out by the hand, when he ſaw the decent proportion of her bodie, the comelineſſe of her face, and grauitie of her countenance, he was on the ſodaine ſo ſnared in the net of fanſie, that he felt himſelf not a conquerour, but conquered, and ſpake vnto her in this order. Beautifull matrone (for I perceiue you are the miſtreſſe of this houſhold) the pleaſant weapons wherewith you fight, haue giuen me ſuch a ſwthing wound, that although it haue penetrated the very depth of my heart, and yeelded me thy captiue, where I was in the number of thoſe that this day boaſt of victorie, yet I am forced to confeſſe, that Fortune hath not a litle fauoured me, in that it was my hap to be ouercome by ſo ſwéete an enemy as your ſelfe. Feare not therefore ſwéete, for I am not come hither to do thée or thy family any wrong, but to do thée pleaſure & ſeruice. Wherewith he eſpying his ſouldiers buſie with raping and pilfering, pocketting and bagging vp ſuch things as they liked beſt, commanded them to ceaſe, and to ſéeke their bootie elſewhere; and appointing ſome of them to frée the houſe from the incurſion of other Captaines and ſouldiers, he returned vnto my mother, who could not ſufficiently lament our miſfortune, that we were not by my father in the Citie, not regarding the loſſe of all her goods, but the daunger vnto which her honeſtie was expoſed. The Captaine therefore perceiuing her ſo gréeued, began againe in this ſort to comfort her. Braue dame, I beſéech you do not afflict your ſelfe, ſéeing you haue no cauſe, for where you ſée among your neighbors not one eſcape

the furie of the ſouldier, who ſpoyleth them of all their ſubſtance, of their iewels, of their cattaile, of their beaſtes, of their deareſt houſhold ſtuffe, burneth their houſes, taketh the patrones priſoners, and plagueth them with all kind of warlike iniurie; you contrarilie haue not ſo much as a bromeſtaffe remoued out of your houſe. And although your huſband were here as it ſéemeth he is not, yet ſhould he not haue one haire of his head impaired. For whatſoeuer I promiſe, I ſweare vnto you by the faith of a Gentleman and ſouldiour, that I will performe no leſſe. And therefore I pray you ceaſe from wéeping, & waſh not your cheéks with your teares, bathe not your ſelfe in water which is procured with ſo much griefe.

All this could not perſuade my wofull mother to giue ouer her ſorrow, or to ſlacken her griefe; for ſhe well knew that when the Syrens ſing moſt ſwéetly, they intend moſt harme; that when the fowler whiſleth moſt pleaſantly, he wiſheth the birds moſt miſery; and that the fore neuer praiſed the hennes, but when he aimed at the cocke; and ſo ſhe did more then nuſdoubt that theſe words of the captain intended to no other purpoſe but to crop the blome of her honeſtie, and to become lord of her beautie. The conſideration wherof, ſo plighted her with exceéding ſorrow, that ſhe ceaſed not from weéping for all the captaines prattle, nor dained to giue him one word in anſwer to his ſayings. Neuertheleſſe he bore her frowardneſſe ſo patiently, that he changed not his former tune, but rather continued in his ſwéet & mild ſpéeches, trying by all means he could to aſſuage her dolour, & to prouoke her to accept of his ſeruice and friendſhip, vſing her ſo curtuouſly, that he ſéemed rather to be ſome eſpeciall friend then ſtraying enemy. For though my mother wel marked the cauſe which moued him to vſe fauourable ennittie, & eſpied that he was caught in the ſnare of her beautie, yet could ſhe not ſufficiently wonder at his modeſtie, wherewith though he ſought to couer or cloake his diſeaſe, (for he reuealed it vnto her at the firſt) yet he did not ſo much as offer her the leaſt diſgrace in the worlde, neither by word nor déed.

In

In the meane while the King of *Castle* (who in proper person had pursued his enemy our King, who hauing reached to the walles of the Citie, was freed by the helpe of the cannon which forbad the enemy to approach neare) returning againe through our village, being weary, and seeing no house that liked him so well as ours, (for the most part of our neighbours houses were burned) lighted from his horse and entered into the hall, where he found the captaine by my mother, who wept so bitterly that it might haue moued any heart to compassion. But the King maruelling to see her in such a wofull case, and yet marked that her house was so trimme, and all things in as good order as if no souldiers had bene neare it, asked the Captaine what the woman ailed. I, sorie of the Kings comming, yet seeing there was no remedy sith it chanced so, made this answere.

Dread soueraign (quoth he) it was my hap to light on this house, where at my entrie, I found this Matrone being mistresse of this family, and beholding her beautie and modest plight, I forced my selfe to giue ouer the rigorous entreatment of warre, and to vse her according to her deserts, whose grauitie and comely grace hath priuiledged her from the fury of my souldiers, in so much that they haue not by me bene allowed to do her the least domage that may be. Yet notwithstanding doth she weepe and make such griefe as if she were worse vsed then all the rest of her neighbours, that haue not only lost their goods but also their husbands and children, yea and their honestie being violated and rauished by the common mercenary souldiers. Therefore mightie conquerour, what she ayleth or what cause shee hath to take on in this manner, it passeth my diuination to coniecture. Why then (quoth the King) I pray thee yelde ouer thy captiue vnto me, and I will giue thee two cheefest noble men captiues of the King of *Arragons*, that I haue taken in this flight, in liew of her: and let me try whether I cannot find better means to slake her griefe and procure hir solace then thou hast don. As they were busie about changing of captiues, newes was brought, ỹ the enemy [illegible]

out of the citie being an huge and mighty company, marching toward the place where he was; whereat the King amazed, cauſed the chiefe Marſhall of his Army to call vp the ſouldiers and to place them in battaile araie to withſtand their enemy, but all in vaine; for the ſouldiers ſtraied ſo wide to ſeeke their bootie and to benefit themſelues with the ſpoyle, that if they had not in time plaid ſcampado, they had bene ſlaine euery man. Which the King perceiuing, mounting on his ſteede, and loth to leaue his new captiue behinde him, cauſed my mother to be ſet behinde one of his noble men, and ſo they poſted away, where I poore wretch bawled as children of that age I then was in, being about foure yeares olde, are accuſtomed to do when they be ſeparated from their mother. My father deſirous to know how we fared in the midſt of the enemy, ſnatched occaſion by the forehead, and went forth of *Targonna* with them that purſued the enemy, and comming home, marueled to ſee the houſe in ſo good eſtate, but miſſing my mother, aſked what was become of her, which he ſone knew by my crying, who ſaid my mother was carried away by ỹ ſouldiers. Wherat he was ſo moued, as you may well conſider how any man might be cheared in ſuch a caſe, and therefore will not I waſte the time in declaring what exceeding ſorrow my father made for the abſence of his wife, intending to hazard his life, but he would haue her againe. But alaſſe the King of *Caſtile*, being fled to a Caſtle which hee had wonne not paſſing foure or fiue dayes before, ſaued himſelfe within the walles of the ſame, from the furie of his enemie which ceaſed not to purſue him; and ſo my father ſawe no way to obtaine his deſire, ſeeing my mother was within the foreſaid caſtle, which was ſo ſtrong that it could not eaſily be incorporated by our men, which aſſailed it fiercely, but to no purpoſe: for the ſouldiers that were ſcattered in the flight, met togither about a league from the caſtle, and being raied in battle order, in the night time brake into our campe, and making great ſlaughter among our men although they could not diſcomfit our Army, yet they got within the walles of their caſtle and were ioyned to the reſt of their

company,

companie, in ſo much that our men had no hope to win the caſtle, and ſo departed towards the citie; which my father toke very heauily, ſeeing he was cut from his wife; and ſo he returned home very mournfully, imagining and inuenting how he might haue my mother againe and redeeme her from captiuitie, though it ſhould haue coſt him all whatſoeuer he might make with ſale of his goods. Yet his hope was but ſmall to get her againe for any price, ſeeing the mayds and ſeruants of the houſe had told him how ſhe was caried away by the kings command, and declared vnto him how all things were paſſed touching the friendly hoſtilitie of the Captaine, the Kings demaund, the chaunging of captiues, and all other things that concerned the carrying away of their miſtreſſe.

In the meane time my mother, whom the King of *Caſtile* ſolicited to diſhoneſtie, was moſt miſerably tormented & greeued, that her fortune was ſo aduerſe as to be in the handes of him that might force her to do that which he pleaſed, though the lawes both of God, nature, and the country, were contrary vnto it. But ſhe purpoſed rather to die then to conſent to his leaud wil, and to eſteeme more of her chaſtitie, then his fauour, though ſhe were but a baſe perſon and he a King; loth to chaunge her honeſtie for his kingdome. Yet the foreſaid Captain perceiuing that my mother was ſo greeuouſly vexed with ſorow for her captiuitie, came vnto her as priuily as he might, and comforted her as much as he could, promiſing that if ſhe would truſt him, he wold releaſe her from her impriſonment, and bring her home to her houſe or where ſhe pleaſed. This, although it did not a litle moderate my mothers griefe, yet ſhe feared leaſt ſhe ſhould not ſo much be deliuered out of her miſerie, as chaunge the kinde of her calamitie, and ſhunning one gulphe, ſhe miſdoubted to fall into another, according to that ſaying:

Incidit in ſyllam cupiens vitare Charybdim, which cauſed her to bery doubtful in deliberation, not knowing what ſhe might beſt do in that her great perpleritie. Neuertheleſſe conſidering that the worſt that might happen was, that ſhe ſhould be

abuſed but by a Captain, where otherwiſe ſhe ſhould remaine ſubiect to the luſt and ryot of a King; making caſe of the vice, and not regarding the perſons, ſhe reſolued to follow the Captaines counſell, thinking that it might as well proue for her benefit as contrarily, where if ſhe remained with the King, ſhe could not hope for amendment, ſeeing luſt cannot be quenched by vertue, but rather enflamed and ſtirred vp to further wickedneſſe. The Captaine hearing her willing to vſe his help, told her that the King intended the next day after to ride to another caſtle where he purpoſed to muſter his Army and to beſiege the citie *Targonna*, but ment to let him be as chiefe gouernour of the caſtle: therefore he willed her to faine that ſhe was extreemly ſicke, and to yeeld the King a pleaſant countenance at his departure, beſeeching him to leaue her there to reſt ſeeing ſhe was ill at eaſe, & promiſing him that ſhe would be readie her health recouered, to doe his Maieſtie any pleaſure and ſeruice it might pleaſe him to commaund her. And then (quoth the Captaine) if you do but obtain ſo much of him, let me alone for the reſt. She thanking him for his great deſertes towardes her, promiſed to vſe the matter ſo, that ſhee doubted not but to obtaine ſo much of the King, as (to be ſhort) ſhe did. For the King marched with his bands and left her to the keeping of this Captaine, who being appointed generall of the Caſtle, that night came vnto my mother and brought her one of his ſutes of apparell, willing her ſecretly to put it on her, and to come to his Chamber aſſoone as ſhe was readie: which ſhe did, and was no ſooner come, but hee commaunded the watch to let downe the bridge and open the gates, for that he minded himſelfe, onely accompanied with one Gentleman, to make the ſcoutwatch, and to eſpie whether the enemy were about the Caſtle, or had ſent anie ſpies to learne whether the King were there, or to knowe what they went about. The watch forced to obey their chiefe Gouernour, though they thought it but little pollicie, notwithſtanding that he might be thought venturous, in daring to vndertake that ſeruice which moſt common ſouldiers ſeeke

to put bye, they did as their Gouernour commaunded, and let him goe forth with his companion, whome they knew not.

The Captaine and my mother being out of the Castle, sweare there, that he would for her sake neuer enter into the same againe, or serue the King his soueraigne any longer, but after he had ledde her home to her husband, he would séeke his fortune in some straunge countrey where he might be freed from the harme that might ensue by reason of the Kings anger and indignation against him, carrying my mother away from him. Which she marking wept bitterly, that so valiant a Captaine and worthie a Gentleman should be depriued of all his wealth and substance, yea of that great honour and credit which by his vertue and prowesse he had won among all his countrey-men both in the Court and in the Campe for her sake. But he most kindly prayed her to content her selfe, and not to care for him; for so he might doe her pleasure, and so shée might by his meanes enioy her content and wished desire, he should be satisfied, séeing he desired nothing so much as her blisse, and protesting that his chiefest felicitie consisted onely in her prosperitie.

Shée greeued for nothing so much, as that shée wist not how she might worthily recompence his deserts could not be pacified, but wept continually, not caring for her selfe, but for rowing that the good and valiant Knight had abandoned all, for to restore her to her former libertie, and to frée her from dishonestie.

But by this they arriued at the village where my father was not, nor any person in the worlde in our house; for my father thought not that he might safely staie in his own house, for feare least he should be watched for, and by the King of *Castiles* command, be slain by the enimy. But he had put away all his seruants & taken me with him, insomuch that we were in a certain shepheards house somthing far from the vilage which was burned, where no man durst dwell. The captain therfore & my mother, entering the house & finding no man, maruelled

greatly, and by my mothers entreatie, departed thence towards the citie *Targonna*, where she made great enquirie for my father and me, but they could not hear of vs. But you must note by the way, that the Captaine had changed his apparell and put on a shepheards garment, and my mother likewise putoff her mans weed & attired her selfe according to her sex. And within two or three daies after they had bene in the citie, they chaunced to light on a certaine shepheard whom my mother knew, and who knew my parents as well as any of all our vilage. Of this shepheard did my mother vnderstand, that the King of *Castile* returning to the castle where he had left her, and finding her absent, and the generall gouernour, whom he would haue trusted with a greater chage, was so enraged, that he hanged the Captain of the watch for letting him forth; and marching with his whole Army towards our village, he destroyed all that he met with, and put all the country men he could finde to the edge of his sword, sparing neither man, woman, nor childe. This shepheard told my mother, that for as much as he had seene my father and me in a litle cottage adioyning to our village, he thought certainly that we had not escaped the Kings fury, but that we were both slaine: which bad tydings greeued my mother in such sort, that vnlesse the good knight had perseuered in his comfortable consolations, she had either died for sorrow, or ended her griefe by finishing her life with her owne handes. On the other side, my father who by good fortune being forewarned of the Kings furious comming to the village, escaped the danger which he was like to incur; but when hee heard of the proclamation which was made throughout all the country by the Kings commaund, &c. That whosoeuer could bring him the head of the same strumpet which refusing to be his concubine, had by her dishonest enticements enchanted the heart of Don Aluares de Bazora, one of his cheefest Captaines in his warres (for so was the good Captaine called) and bewitched him to loue her, & carry her away from her husband, should haue all the liuings that belonged or appertained to the foresaid Don Aluaro. I say, when my

father

father had heard this proclamation, thinking that my mother was guilty of the crime she was accused of, and supposing that she had changed her praised chastitie into wantonnesse, he thought that she had allured the knight to leaudnesse, which so greeued him, that after he had largely and lamentably complained of her disloyaltie, he toke me by the hand and departed out of *Aragon* presently, trauelling towardes *Italy*, where in the kingdome of *Naples* in a certaine village called *Cinqueni*, he purposed to liue the remanent of his life. In the mean time it chanced that the Kings of *Aragon* and *Castile*, seeing they could not by warre become Lord the one ouer the other, they concluded a wished and durable peace among their countries, making a perpetuall league of friendship betweene the sayd kingdomes of *Aragon* and *Castile*. In so much that the King of *Castle* returned to his country with his whole Army; and in short space were the vilages and townes that had bene sacked & burned newly built vp again, and all the inhabitants of the country returned home to their houses. My mother therefore desirous to know whether my father was slaine or no, returned to our village with the Knight, to enquire for my father and me, but no man could tel her any newes of vs. In so much that she verily thought that he was dead, & I likewise. She lined in that state yet three or foure moneths; which time being expired, the Captaine made earnest sute vnto her in reward of his seruice and faithfulnesse, seeing her husband was dead, to take him to her husband, swearing and protesting that he would be as loyall vnto her as any man in the world might be vnto his wife. She acknowledging that he deserued more then he requested, yet loth so soon to mary again, did driue him of as long as she could, till at length not able to gainsay his lawfull request, she married her selfe vnto him, and to the end that she might forget her former deceased husband the better (thinking it but meer trouble to be combred with the remembrance of her dead husband being remarried), she and her new husband went to some bordering towne of *Castile*, where they remained foure yeares, hauing a childe the first yeare, named

Philorenus,at my mothers request,she being desirous to haue a new Philorenus, seeing she had lost the other. You must in like maner note, that the Captaine sith the first houre that he departed out of the Castle with my mother,named himself as my father was called(to wit Coreandro)to the end ỳ he might be vnknowne; which name he reteined as long as he liued.

Thus they hauing liued(as I said) foure yeere in the borders of *Castile*, certaine mutinies rising in the towne of their abode, about the strangers that liued in the same place, they left that towne and went into *Italy*, thinking the farther they went from *Castile*, the more they should free themselues from the daunger that might ensue,if they should be knowne. In this voyage my mother, either by the necessitie of her destinies, or the labour of her troublesome iourney fell sicke, and passed her fatall day in a certaine village of *Italy*. Her husband the Captaine, though he so impatiently toke the death of his deere wife, for whome he had brought himselfe into all these troubles,that he cursed the Fates, and blasphemed the Gods, for ending her life,and not rather his owne: yet after she was buried,he toke his sonne and trauelled on his iourney,intending to passe ouer his life in solitarie manner, admitting no occasion of ioy or recreation, but onely such as he might enioy by the company of his yong sonne,whom nature had left him as a pledge of remembrance of her whome he so extreemly loued. And it was his his lucke to soiourne in the same vilage, which my father and I dwelled in, being called *Cinquent*, as I haue before mentioned. Where this Captaine with his yong Philorenus, and my father with his also,remained one fortnight the one not knowing of the other. Which space of fourteene daies being fulfilled, the King of *Naples* sent two thousand men to burne the same village,and slaie all the inhabitants thereof,for what reason I cannot now so wel remember, & seeing it maketh not for my purpose, I wil not stand vpõ it any longer: but let you know how ỳ my father hauing had some foreintelligẽce of the kings intent (as many more of our neighbours did, among whome I place the captaine my mo-

thers

thers second husband) and therefore thought best to flie vnto some other place; yet the kings command being something hastily put in execution, it happened that my father with all the rest were so sodeinly assaulted in ỹ night time, that they were compelled to leape out of their beds in their shirts and so take their flight, leauing all ỹ they had behind them; insomuch that neither my father had leisure to take me with him, nor ỹ Captain to saue his Philorenus. Yet was our luck such, that though no child escaped vntimely death, yet we the one not knowing the other, found mercy at the souldiers hands, that were sent to execute the kings pleasure. For they taking pitie vpon vs, thought it was then a sacrilege to kill vs seeing we were so yong, & by the disposition of our bodies, seemed very likely to proue comely men. In so much that we were both of vs priuiledged from death, and carried to the citie of *Naples*. I by a certaine captaine whose hap it was to light on me, and the other Philorenus, by a Sergiant, who seeing his father was fled, ran towards him to bathe his sword in the poore innocent childes blood, for spight that his father had by flight escaped his furie: and comming nèer him, hearing him cry, his choler turned into affection, & she so loued the child (being about three yèers and a halfe old) that he hauing neither wife nor childe, intended to carry him to *Naples*, & to bring him vp as his own sonne. To be short, we liued in *Naples* seuen yèeres, and yet had no knowledge the one of the other.

In the mean time, I shall entreat you (most excellent princesse, and ye worthy gentlemen and shepheards) to mark by the way, that as we were both a like in name, so we were in like maner so like one the other in fauour, in plight of the bodie, in colour of haire, & in voice, that it was impossible by the iungement of the eye to diserne the one from the other, when I had atteined to the eightèenth yèere of my age, and the other Philorenus to the fiftenth yèere of his age; at which time he was fully as tall as I, and in growth reached to the full proportion of length and thicknesse that I was of. The reason whereof was, that we both atteined to our full bignesse at 14. yèeres of our age, in so much that when he reached to fourtène yèeres,

he was fully in bigneſſe equal vnto me. Therefore this being committed to memorie, you ſhall know that after I had dwelled three yeares in *Naples* with the Captaine that brought me thither, it chanced that the ſame captain marrying the daughter of a certaine Knight of great account, celebrated the feaſt of his wedding in very ſolemne maner. For not only the cheefeſt noble men of the countrey were inuited thereto, but the King himſelfe alſo, who diſdained not in proper perſon to honour my maiſters wedding day. The ceremonies of the marriage being finiſhed according to cuſtome, in memorie of Hymæneus, there was a moſt ſumptuous banquet made readie for the king and thoſe nobles that were miniſtred. And it came to paſſe, that the king caſting his eye vppon me (who among my other fellowes ſerued my maiſters gueſts at that feaſt) liked me ſo well, that he aſked the captain whether I was of his affinitie or kindred? The captaine anſwering that I was no kin vnto him, but that he eſtéemed of me as of his ſonne, in in that a father can but giue life to his ſon as he had done vnto me, ſhewing vnto the King where he had me, and how hée brought me from the village *Cinqueni*. The King glad that he had ſaued ſuch a proper ladde from ſo vnhappie and peremptorie death, praied my maiſter to reſigne ouer the title he had of me vnto him, promiſing that it ſhould both be for his profit and my welfare. To make fewe words, of a captaines boye, I became a Kings Page; and that day taking leaue of my olde maiſter, I went to the Court, where I ſo ſerued the King that I could not but pleaſe him; in ſo much that his Maieſtie loued me as déerly as if I had bene ſome noble perſonage, ſuffering me to want nothing, allotting me no worſe company then his owne ſonne, being about the ſame age that I was of, who affected me as if I had bene his naturall brother. Thus I liued in this happie eſtate about two yeares, till Fortune remembring that ſhe had brought me to the vpper end of her whéele, began to threaten me, the hapleſſe downfall from all felicitie, into the depth and profunditie of aduerſitie; wiſhing me no better lucke then my parentes had had in their time, though

ſhe

ſhe had at the firſt gladded me with ſuch good hap, thereby to make me the more impatient to ſuffer her croſſe, and malicious entreatments in time to come. For it is a thing moſt certaine, that among all men that are oppreſſed with aduerſitie, none can ſo ill away with their miſhap, as they that whilome liued in great proſperitie. But leaſt I digreſſe from the matter, know that the King hauing had intelligence by certaine marchants out of *Perſia*, that the king of *Perſia* muſtered his men through all his dominions, intending to make a voyage into *Spaine*, and to bring a mightie Army to inuade the kingdome of *Spaine*, becauſe the kings of *Caſtile*, *Aragon*, and *Portugall*, had refuſed their daughters in marriage to his ſonne, fearing leaſt if *Spaine* were inuaded, *Italy* ſhould become ſubiect: and conſidering that he had entred into league with the king of *Perſia*, and diuerſe times ioyned with him againſt other kingdomes; but loth now in this expedition (ſo likely to turne to his wracke) to become a helper or confederate, purpoſed to ſend me into *Perſia* vnto the king, & to procure a place betweén him and the foreſaid kings of *Caſtile*, *Aragon*, and *Portugall*. I, though I thought my ſelfe altogither vnfit to be imployed in ſuch honourable kinde of ſeruice, and matters of ſuch importance, yet ſéeing it was his Maieſties pleaſure, as I thought it no maners to ſéeme vnwilling, ſo I prepared my ſelfe to put his Maieſties pleaſure in practiſe, and to prouide for all things neceſſary for ſuch a iourny. Therfore knowing the kings pleaſure, and the effect and ſumme of my meſſage, I take my leaue of his Maieſtie & the Quéene, and in like maner of his ſonne Hippolito, (who was ſo ſorrie for my departure, that he could ſcarce bid me farewell) & ſo diſpatched my ſelfe from the court, being accompanied with nine men. What ſucceſſe I had ſithence my departure from *Naples*, you ſhal heare afterwards. In the meane time knowe, that the ſecond day after I went from *Naples*, the other *Philorenus* (ſonne vnto my mother by that Caſtilian Captain,) dwelling in the ſame citie of *Naples*, with the Sergeant that brought him from *Cinqueni*, chaunced in the euening time to paſſe by a Noble mans houſe, where

Hippolito the Kings sonne had bene at supper. Who standing at the doze among certaine gentlemen, espied this Philorenus, and thought vndoubtedly that I was the man, & that I had chaunged my apparrell, to the ende that I should not be knowne to be Philorenus. Which he imagined that I should haue done, being vnwilling to go in ambassage vnto the king of *Persia*, and yet fearing to aske leaue to staie at home, and to be discharged of that so troublesome a seruice, I being vnaccustomed to deale in such affaires of so great moment and importance. Ye therfoze stealing from his company, folowed my brother (foz we came both out of one wombe) and when hée saw him in a place where leastcompany was, hée toke him by the slippe of his cloake, and calling him by his name Philorenus, bad him not be gréeued though hee were ouertaken by him, séeing it was his lucke that hée was first espied by him that was the best friend that hée had in the wozlde. My brother knowing Hippolito the Kings sonne, began to fall on his knées, to honour him accozding to the manner of the countrey, maruelling that the yong Prince vsed such wozds vnto him. But Hippolito loth that I should be knowne, (foz that the king and all the nobilitie knew not but that I was departed from *Naples* foz *Persia*) with something an angrie countenance, vttered these wozdes. Philorenus, if thou be wise follow my counsaile, and leaue these tokens of honour, least thou be bewzayed, and if my request will not serue, let my commandement moue thée to be moze prudent, and follow mée. Philorenus my brother, rauished with maruell what this meant, and fearing to displease him who might make him repent his offence, did as he commanded. And so they went togither to the court, where Hippolito bearing my brother into his chamber, & shutting vp the doze least any of the courtiers should interrupt them, and know of my being there (thinking nothing lesse then that the same Philorenus was my brother, séeing neither I my selfe knew that I had a brother, noz my brother ỹ he had a brother in ỹ Court by Foztune lifted to so high estate) began in this maner to speak vnto him.

Ah

Ah Philorenus, who would haue thought that the great discretion and wisedome whereby you haue obteined such loue and credit at my fathers hands, hath so lost it force & vigor, that it suffereth thée so indiscretly & fondly to behaue thy self, being imploied by his Maiestie in a matter which might haue bene committed to the chéefest person of the realme? And art thou so bereft of all thy wits & vnderstanding, that thou thinkest that we al are so blind, ỳ because thou hast put on another garment we should not know thée? Thinkest thou ỳ we are so forgetful of thy fauour, ỳ the change of apparel is able to make thée vnknowne vnto vs? No, no, Philorenus, & albeit that al other men were taken with obliuiõ of thy face, yet ỳ picture of thy visage, the liniaments of thy face, & the very phisiognimy of thy countenance, is so ingrauen in my hart, that no time, no change, no alteratiõ, no colour, no deceit, is able to rase out ỳ print therof.

Wherfore I cannot inough maruel Philorenus, that séeing thou knowest how I am affected towards thée, (insomuch that thou canst not ask any thing of me ỳ lieth in my power to grãt thée, and yet beare the repulse) thou hast notwithstanding so madly sought so dangerous, (if I may say my mind) so colwardly and base meanes to shake off the charge committed vnto thée by the king; whereas if thou hadst but let me know how thou wert so vnwilling to be imployed therin, I would haue intreated my father and perswaded him to sende some other into *Persia*, that I might haue enioyed your companie, for whose absence I doubt not but you perceiued howe sorrye I was. And now, first you know, that though you were neuer more séene by vs or knowne, yet you should be depriued of all the credit & honor which you had in ỳ court, being compelled to liue in obscuritie & base maner, wanting both welth & fame. Besides also, perpend not only what iniury you offer ỳ King, but also what losse & detriment vnto his subiects, & the neighbor kingdoms of *Castle*, *Arogon*, & *Portugall*, in that my fathers intent is frustrated, & an ambassage of such moment, seruing for the welfare of so many worthy kingdoms, neglected. The cõsideratiõ wherof, I hope wil make you come to knowlege of

your fondnesse, yea rather madnesse, in committing so heinous an offence and hurtfull trespasse; whereby you haue deserued the kings indignation, who no doubt if he were acquainted with this your franticke kinde of dealing, would with no lesse paine then death punish your delict.

But I iudge that the Gods tendring thy Fortune, haue made thee so happie, as that thou shouldest be espied by me before thy sinister dealings were bewrayed vnto any other, and so reuealed vnto the king my father; to the end that I might prouide some remedy in this case, and saue thée from the danger which otherwise thou wert like to incurre.

My brother Philorenus, who all this while stood astonished, not knowing the euent of this matter, & maruelling what fury hanted the yong Prince, to make such a large discourse vnto him, he knew not what he ment by his embassage, or what affaire the king should haue committed to his charge, séeing he had neuer bin nére the king, & was altogither vnknowne vnto him: and therefore he wist not what he might imagine of this accident. But knowing, that who so commeth néere the fire is in daunger to be burned, that who so plaieth with the streames may be drowned, and that they that are néere kings are subiect to their power, began to feare least all this sport should be turned into spight; and this yong prince his passime tend to his wracke. And therfore he fel on his knées and made Hippolito this answere.

Most excellent Prince, I am a poore yong man, vnknowne in all places of honour, and especially in the court; howbeit that I know not how your grace knoweth my name. For I confesse my name to be Philorenus, yet I vow and protest before the gods and sacred powers of heauen, that I neuer liued in the court, neuer wore more sumptuous apparel then I now do; neuer spake vnto his maiestie or your grace, & that I know no more of what embassage you speake, or what charge you talke of, then I knew at the houre when I was first borne. Wherefore I beseech your grace to pardon me, for I speak the truth, as your grace well knoweth, who taketh pleasure to

What

mocke his humble seruant.

What Philorenus (replied Hippolito, hast not thou tolde me thy selfe that thou werst borne about the borders betweén the kingdomes of *Aragon* and *Castile*, that thy father was called Coreandro, thy mother Delbia (for that was our mothers name) and that by reason of the warres betweén the said kingdomes, thy father came with thée and dwelled in the village *Cinqueni*, being vnder my fathers subiection, whence thou wert brought to *Naples*? Is not this most true? if not, say I lie.

God forbid (quoth my brother) that I should be so impudent as to giue your grace the lie, séeing that I may in more decent manner deny that which is contrary to veritie, then so. And therefore séeing I confesse all that to be true which your grace hath specified concerning my parentes, my countrey, and my translation from the place where I was borne vnto this country, I hope your grace will pardon me if I deny that I neuer told the least point thereof vnto you. For heauen confound me if euer I spake vnto your grace before this time.

Hippolito moued to rage, burst out at length into these words. Well Philorenus (quoth he,) I perceiue thou art more then mad, and that thou openly doest mocke me, for I say that the gods are not gods, if they confound thée not for thy falshood. It were to be pardoned if thou diddest only offend against me, but séeing thou callest the gods as witnesses of thy horrible falsities and lyes, I cannot forbeare it. But I pray thée tel me one thing; hast thou any brother liuing? No. (quoth my brother) why then (quoth Hippolito) art thou the same Philorenus that my father the king had from the Captaine, vpon the same day that the said Captaine was married; who sayd that he brought thée from *Cinqueni*. True (quoth my brother) I was brought from *Cinqueni*, but yet I know no Captaine that was married, or that gaue me to the kings maiestie. And if it wil please your grace to go with me, or to send to the house where I dwell, you shall both know of him that brought mée from *Cinqueni* & all his neighbors, that I haue dwelled these seuen or eight yeeres with him, euen since the time ỹ I was brought

from the ſaide village *Cinqueni*. It is a maruellous matter (quoth Hippolito) Philorenus, that thou wilt go about to perſwade me a tall, & to moue me to beléeue thy lyes. For if thou wert a God, I durſt ſay that thou lieſt. For thou haſt no brother (ſo thou doeſt confeſſe) and I take all the gods to witneſſe, that one named Philorenus borne in the ſame place that thou acknowledgeſt thy ſelf to be borne in, and of the ſame parents which thou claimeſt for thine, and of ſuch fortune as thou ſaiſt thine was. Then tell me, how is it poſſible but that thou thy ſelfe muſt be the man. And albeit thou hadſt a brother, yet you ſhould not make me beléeue that he can be ſo like thée, as that I ſhould be ſo abſurdly deceiued. Therefore ſéeing thou art ſo obſtinat, thou ſhalt try what ÿ art able to gain therwith.

Herewith Hippolito taketh him by the hand and leadeth him vnto the chamber of preſence, where all the gentlemen and gentlewomen began to cheriſh and welcome him, aſking the cauſe of his ſuddeine returne; and why he had ſo diſguiſed himſelfe in apparell.

My brother almoſt out of his wits, wiſt not what to thinke, but that either they were all more then foliſh, or he borne to be ſcoffed and mocked at: yea he could not a great while be perſwaded but that he dreamed. But Hippolito loking vpon him, and ſéeing what countenance he bore, burſt out into theſe wordes, all the Courtiers ſtanding about. O moſt cunning counterfeyt! who euer ſawe the like? No doubt Philorenus doth not, or rather will not remember, that euerhée knew any of all this noble companie of Gentlemen and Ladies, whereas notwithſtanding, they all diſdaine not to acknowledge, yea and claime old acquaintance. As he had ſo ſaid, the King came into the chamber of preſence to ſée what the matter was, for he had alreadie heard ſomething touching my comming (as they thought) and ſéeing my brother, welcommed him after this manner. Ha our Ambaſſadour, you haue either had winges to flie, or you haue as much ſéene *Perſia* as I haue ſéene Ioue; But I praie you tell mée what may the cauſe of this your holi-day coate? Haue you met with

foles

ſoles by the way? or are you a weery of a Courtiers life? If the one, I was well adzeſſed to ſend ſuch a Legate to *Perſia*, and if the other, I will ſone releeue thée from that care.

With that the King being angry to the heart, commanded his ſonne Hippolito to take order that he might be put into priſon till he had deliberated what death he ſhould die. Which doome, when diſtreſſed Philorenus heard, he fell on his knées and began thus to entreat his Maieſtie to be mercifull vnto him. Moſt excellent Monarch, I beſéech your maieſtie by the religion & dutie that all mortall men owe to ỹ diuine powers, to heare me cleare my ſelf of all ſuch crimes which it ſhuld ſéeme ỹ I haue committed againſt your maieſtie. For I perceiue ỹ either it pleaſeth your maieſty to exhilarat & glad your courtiers with miſery, & threaten me impriſonment & death, to giue the occaſion to laugh at my ſimpleneſſe and innocenſie, or there hath bene ſome other man of my name and like me, that hath committed this heinous offence againſt your maieſtie, which moſt falſly is attributed vnto me. For I proteſt before heauen and earth, that I am not that Philorenus (if ſuch an one hath bin here) as I wil proue by the ſouldier that brought me from *Cinqueni*, with whom I haue dwelled euer ſithence I was by him brought to *Naples*; as he & all his neighbors ſhal teſtifie, or ile die what death your maieſtie ſhall pleaſe to appoint.

The King hearing him ſo ſoberly proteſt & ſweare that he was not the ſame Philorenus they toke him to be, commanded him to tell one of his guard where the ſame ſouldier dwelt, which when my brother had done, the King commaunded the ſame man whom my brother ſaid was his maſter, and foure or fiue of his chéefeſt neighbors ſhuld ỹ nert day come before him.

Inſomuch that the ſame Sergeant being called Signor Valentino, accompanied with thrée or foure gentlemen of great creadit dwelling in the ſame pariſh, with him were brought, appeared before his maieſtie according to his command, & my brother being brought before them, the King aſked them whether they knew that fellow?

They

They answered all that yes, and tolde the king all other circumstances concerning my brothers parents, & his comming from *Cinqueni* to *Naples*, affirming all what they had said, vpon their oathes.

The king maruelled that all things agreed with the Philorenus for whom he toke him to be, both his name, the place where he was borne, the name of his parents, and other accidents, onely this different that he had dwelt with a Captaine which gaue him to the king, where these men testified that that Philorenus whome they had present, had dwelt with the Sargeant till that present day, & neuer entred into the court; in so much that the king began to thinke that there were two brothers of them, and that they themselues knew it not, by reason that they were separated one from the other so timely. But to the end that he might be the surer of this matter, hée sent for the Captaine of whom he had me. Who being come, and hauing séene my brother, the king asked him whether he knew any priuy token about my body wherby he might know me, if there were one in the worlde so like me that he might hardly be knowne from me. Such token (answered the Captaine) I know none my soueraigne Lord; neither is it necessary, for I, nor any man that hath eyes can deubt of this man, but that it is Philorenus whom I brought from *Cinqueni*, and I will not only say so, but also affirme it by oath, and dye vpon the same. The other gentlemen that were present, said, that he might be deceiued, for that they had alreadie deposed the contrary.

To make fewe wordes, if the king had not bene present, they had gone togither by the eares, and tried the matter not by words but by wounds rather, and by fight come to knowledge of the right Philorenus. But the king commanded them to returne to their mansion place, and to leaue the person concerning whom the question grew, (to wit my brother) with him, for that he would not so be satisfied, but would haue him kept in hold till such time as he might send into *Persia* after me to know whether I were there or no: imagining ý if I were

found

found there, then the same Philorenus whom they had in the Court should be my brother: and if it were so, the king intended to giue him some high office; but if contrarily I were not found in *Persia*, then it should be manifest that the same Philorenus was no other but the man whom he was iudged by all the countries to be, and both he & his pretended maister, with the other Gentlemen that had bene before the king, should with death be punished for their madnesse, in taking vpon them to depose such falsities, and so openly to mock with their king and soueraigne.

Well, they being returned, and my brother clapt in hold, two knights were dispatched from the court to *Persia*; who taking their iourny the same way that I had bene prescribed to take, at euery citie that was of any fame he enquired for me, but in vaine; for they passed into *Persia*, and yet could heare nothing of me: neither in the way as they went thither, nor in the court of the king of *Persia*. The reason was, that after I had trauelled two dayes from *Naples*, as I roade with my men through a huge wood, we met with fiue and twentie Ægyptians, which hauing certaine Cels in that wood, liued vpon the spoyle of those that passed through the same. These villaines ougly in countenance, in colour resembling diuels, and in stature gyants; hauing espied vs, and seeing that we were able to outrunne them being on horsebacke, marched on before vs as if they had not thought of vs till they had reached to a place seruing fit for their purpose, where our horse hindered vs more then they could aduantage our valour. For wee entered into a thicket full of thornes and brambles where wee were compelled to light and leade our horse by the bridle, and had more trouble to pul them after vs, then to passe our selues. Now the Ægyptians therefore thinking it time to pursue their praie, came all of them towards vs, and being most of them armed with demy-pikes and iauelings, set vpon vs so fiercely on the sodain, that we scarce knew whether we should resist their furie, or yeelde to their mercie. But seeing we had no time to deliberate vpō the matter, quick

expedition was neceſſary, and I perpending that all the mercie that ſuch villaines had, was more then crueltie, I thought it better to die in defence of our honour, then to fall into the hands of ſuch barbarous raſcals. And ſo I drew my ſword, as alſo all the reſt did that were with me, and abandoning our horſe, we dealt with them villains in ſuch ſort that we wounded three or foure of them deadly, but yet we could not eſcape their hands by reaſon that they were ſo many of them, and had the vantage of vs in that they had halfe pikes & we none. To be ſhort, the end of this conflict was ſuch as I could more deplore it then auoyd it. For the moſt of my men were ſlaine, the reſt eſcaped by flight, & I being thruſt through the arme with a pike, was taken by them Egyptian villaines and bound faſt hand and foote, and ſo they caſt me vpon one of our horſes and brought me to their cels; whither they alſo conueyed the horſes and my vaggage. When I was brought to their cels, they beganne to conſult what they ſhould do with me. For they thought it pittie (which affection did not proceed from any good diſpoſition of theirs, ſeeing they were bereft of all good qualities, but rather was bred in them by the will & pleaſure of the gods, who being moued to mercy would deliuer me from the wicked vilains) to kil me, ſeeing they had gotten ſo great a bootie by me; and on the other ſide, they feared that if I ſhould eſcape, their knauery ſhould be detected, by reaſon that I was acquainted not onely with their wicked kind of dealings, but alſo with the place where they kept themſelues, being in the ſecreteſt part of all the world. But after they had a long time deliberated vpon the matter, they came by me and brought me ſuch meat as they had (though I had no great mind to eat) and vntied the cords wherwith they had bound me; but they put on a paire of ſhackles on my legs, for feare leaſt I ſhould outrun them. Thus I liued among them the ſpace of nine or ten moneths, in ſuch miſery, ý I wiſhed death euery day to deliuer me from ý wretched life which I led in ý pitiful kind of captiuity.

But I will returne to my brother, (whoſe hap was euil by reaſon of miſhap.) For the knights that were ſent into *Perſia*

to

to enquire for me, returned to *Naples*, and enformed the king that they had not heard any thing of me, & that they could assure his maiestie ỳ I had not bene seene in *Persia*, nor in any place betwéen *Naples* and *Persia*, saue only in one towne about one daies iourney from the court, in which place they had certain intelligence ỳ I had bin seen. Other information they had none. The Sergeant, my brothers maister, & the other gentlemen his neighbours, vpon this newes fled, fearing least they should haue bene vniustly put to death, blaming Fortune for that she dealt so cruelly with them, that they were compelled to saue their liues by flight, where they had not in any maner deserued death. But the king being enformed of their flight, caused all their lands & liuings to be confiscated & adiudged to his exchecquor. And my brother Philorenus was the same day araigned & condemned to be torne in péeces with foure horses. But it chanced on ỳ day which was appointed for his execution, that the quéene fell in labor & was deliuered of a daughter; to celebrate the feast of whose birth, my brothers executiõ was prolonged 30. daies. For the king wold not haue any act committed all the time ỳ the quéene his wife laie in childe-bed. In the mean time (most gratious princesse) may you think in what taking my poore brother might be, ỳ wist not how he might escape that cruel death which he was ordeined to die, although his conscience cleared him from all offence or crime, whereby he might deserue any punishment.

But at last, Fortune minding either to alleuiat his greef, or to bring him into greater troubles, suborned a certain knights daughter which attended on ỳ quéen, to snatch occasion at ỳ delay which she heard ỳ king had commanded to be made cõcerning the putting of my brother to death, & to séek means to deliuer him out of prison, & therby to saue his life. For this gentlewoman being called Cerasilla, (whõ I loued better then my self) thinking with the king & all the rest of the courtiers that my brother was ỳ same Philorenus ỳ courted her, & so earnestly made loue vnto her, ỳ she might easily perceiue ỳ he loued and honored her aboue all other womẽ, whẽ she heard ỳ Philorenus

was condemned, ſhe was exceeding ſorie. But the good chance of the Queens childzen, by reaſon wherof the time of his death was prolonged, ſomething aſſwaged her dolour, and gaue her hope that ſhe might finde meanes to recompence the ſeruice which ſhe ſuppoſed that he had done her. Therefore vpon the third day after the yong Princeſſe was borne, conſidering that all the courtiers were merry, and toke more care how they might paſſe ouer the time with making good cheare, & recreating themſelues with diuerſe ſorts of paſtimes, then they did in looking who were preſent or abſent, or who went in & out of the chamber of preſence? ſhe ſteppeth from the Queenes priuie chamber to her chamber, and there araying her ſelfe in mans apparell; (for ſhe had a ſute belonging to her brother which he had left in her chamber) and taking her apparell vnder her cloake, ſhe hieth to the gentleman that kept my brother, and finding him buſie with playing at tables, aſked him how that it fared with Philorenus. The gentleman thinking that ſhe had bene miſtreſſe Cerafillas brother (for he knew the cloathes, and her brother being but a yong youth without any haire on his face, ſhe was not miſdoubted to be any other then he himſelf) told her that Philorenus would perhaps be as merry as all the reſt if he knew not the day of his death, which though it were prolonged, yet it abated not his griefe. I pray you (quoth the tranſformed gentleman) may not a man talke with him? Why not? quoth the gentleman. If you pleaſe to ſpeake with him, I will open the chamber doore where he is, and you may go to him. And with that the gentleman let her in, and went to his tables again with the gentlemẽ that kept him company. Shee being entred into the chamber where my brother walked vp and downe very heauily, ſaluted him and ſpake vnto him in this maner.

Philorenus, albeit you perhaps are of opinion that I did in deed deſpiſe the curteſies which you haue offered me at diuerſe times, as I ſeemed to make light of them in word, and that I rewarded thy ſeruice with inward hate, as I feyned by outward frowardneſſe, yet I hope thou ſhalt in time by triall

proue

proue this surmise false, and be forced to confesse that she is not vngratefull whom thou so often hast accused to be cruell. For though I did repaie thée with a frowne when I wished thée a fauour; and yéelded thée a lowring countenance, when I wished thée a pleasing smile; to make proofe of thy constancie: I doubt not, but now séeing I make thée acquainted with the cause, thou wilt not take the effect in ill part.

My brother, admiring at the straungenesse of this spéech, wist not what to answere. For he knew not the person that spake vnto him, and was in doubt whether it was a man or a woman, her apparell shewing the one, and the course of her talke the other: and therefore he thought best not to interrupt her discourse, but to heare the end of her tale, which she continued on in this maner.

And considering (sweete Philorenus) that the greatest pleasure that may be done vnto any man is to saue him from the the terriblenesse of vntimely death, I am resolued to shew thée no lesse gratuitie and recompence for thy faithfull and loyall seruice, then to free thée from the kings rage, or my selfe to incurre the same danger that you be in your selfe. Vnto which purpose I haue my selfe put on my brothers cloathes, and brought mine vnder my cloake to attire you therewith, and so lead you out of this chamber where you are imprisoned, and rid you from the danger in which you know that you now are.

And for as much as delaie breedeth danger, I pray you dispatch and follow my counsell, for the courtiers are all so filled with wine, that we may passe and repasse without any suspition.

My brother was so perplexed, being surprised with gladnesse and griefe togither, that hée could scarce tell what hée should do; for though he suspected that this gentlewoman mistooke him as the king and the other courtiers did, yet he feared least she had bene suborned by the king to bring him into a foles paradice, and so to aggrauate his miserie. Wherefore as he stood amazed doubting what were best for him to do, she urged him in this maner to make spéed.

Louing Philorenus, doest thou now make so strange of her, that to saue thy life putteth her owne in hazard? Hast thou forgotten what pleasure thou wert wont to say I did thée in giuing thée leaue to speake to me, and art thou so chary now of thy tongue that thou wilt not vtter one word? Thou hast oftentimes sworne that thou wouldest not spare thy life to do me seruice; and now I venture mine to do thée pleasure, wilt thou not accept of my seruice?

My brother considering that the worst that might ensue was death, framed her this answere.

Sweete Lady, if I haue displeased you with vngratefull silence, perswade your selfe that the onely cause therof did proceede of the ioy which I conceiued of your présence, wherby I was wrapped in an extasie; in so much that my tongue and the other instruments of spéech, as I thought to haue welcommed you, denied me their accustomed dutie, hauing lost their operation by reason of the excesse of gladnesse which possessed my soule. But I beséech you go not about to vndo your self to saue me, least in séeking my weale, you procure your own woe, & so where but one should suffer death, you bring both in danger.

Mistresse Cerasilla glad of his answere, but sorie to sée him make no more haste to do that which she desired, she spurred him forward, saying.

Sweete Philorenus, doubt not but I am persuaded of thy loue towards me, & that I thinke of thy silence as thou saist. As for the rest, let me alone. I hope where you feare we shall both fall in ỹ trap, ỹ we shal neither of vs be snared in the net. And therfore be ruled by me, séeing womens wits haue sometimes brought that to passe which mens minds hath admired.

To be short, my brother became mistresse Cerasilla in attire, and was apparelled in her cloathes, whose bodie was the habitacle of my heart, accompanied by the saint whome I worshipped, though absent and in whome my minde dwelled, though my bodie was in subiection of the villaines that kept me in their cels after they had robbed me and slaine my men. Yet if I had then knowne of the loue and affection of my mi-

stresse

ſtreſſe towards me, and how willingly ſhe would haue endeuoured to deliuer me frō the barbarous entertainment of the Egyptian theeues, if ſhe had knowne that her faithfull Philorenus was ſo afflicted; my miſerie (though it had bene greater) could not haue bene halfe ſo troubleſome vnto me, nor my filthie priſon ſo noyſome. But leaſt I be troubleſome vnto this worthie company by digreſſing from the matter, knowe that my brother paſſed for miſtreſſe Cerafilla, and ſhe for her brother, and bidding the gentleman that was charged with him Adieu, they departed, leauing him ſo buſie at his game, that he tended his plaie more then his priſoner. In ſo much that they making all the haſte they could, marched through the Court, and reſembling that they went to walke in the fields, they ſpared not their legges, but ſometimes running, ſometimes going a rounde pace, they did aduantage their iourny in ſuch manner, that the next morning (hauing trauelled all night) they reached to the wood where I was, there thinking himſelfe out of danger, they reſted. And though they had made ſufficient prouiſion of money, yet when hunger beganne to gnaw them, hauing diſgeſted their meate by their walke or rather flight, they wiſt not what ſhift to make for victuals. In ſo much that they went ſtraying vp and downe the wood to ſee if they could finde any rootes or wilde frute growing there, intending to feede on them, till finding the way to ſome houſe they might buy other kinde of meate. But miſtreſſe Cerafilla being weary of raunging and ouertaken with ſleepe, laie downe amidſt the buſhes, and praied my brother alſo to reſt himſelfe a while: but hee hauing more minde to eate then to ſleepe, bed her take her reſt, and he would in the meane time ſeeke for ſome victualles againſt ſhe waked. In ſo much that he marked the place where hee left her, and went towardes the ſide of the wood whence he might ſee a chimney ſmoaking. Whereof glad, though he feared leaſt he ſhould be met with, yet ventured and went to the houſe, where he found a poore old woman ſitting by the fire al alone, & deſired her of al friendſhip to let him haue bread for his mony. The woman perceiuing ỹ

he

he was some gentleman of account (in the meane time may it please you to note that my brother and mistresse Cerasilla had changed apparell in the way, each taking that sute which agreed to his fere) told him that she had bread, but she feared it was too browne for his eating; but hée desiring to let him haue it such as it was, she brought him foure loaues which he tooke, and paying her as much as she asked, to the wood he returnéd as fast as he could: where he had espied a fountaine, and therefore staied not with the olde woman to drinke, shée proffering him a glasse of Cidre, being a kinde of wine made of apples. For he purposed to carry mistresse Cerasilla bread first, and then to lead her to the said fountaine, and there, with her to quench his thirst. But when he came to the place where he left her, mistresse Cerasilla was not there; for waking out of her sléepe, she went to sée if she could not méete with him; for, because he had bene something long away (séeing the place whither hée went for bread was about one league from the wood, and he had wandred vp and downe the wood about two or thrée houres, ere he came to the wood side whence he espied the smoake) she suspected that he was lost in the wood, and could not find the way to come vnto her againe. And so it came to passe, that she séeking him lost him, and he not finding her, lost himselfe. For he was so distracted with sorrow and griefe, that as a man abandoning all hope, and in a maner dispairing, he sate downe, and laying his elbow on the ground to support his head, began in this maner to exclaime against Fortune for her spightfull entreatment.

Ah Fortune, I perceiue my destinies haue ordeined me to be the subiect wherein thou maist worke thy power, and shew thy inconstancie: and wherein thou doest plant the banner of thy forces, and hang vp the trophees of thy victories! For who is there that is acquainted with the course of my life, that dare deny, but that euery part therof hath bene guided by Fortune, and subiect to her accidentary gouernment? For after the day of my birth (the circumstance whereof may be attributed to no power but to the hidden secrets of Dame Nature onely) was

it

it not a chaunce and accidentall cause, that I should with my cradle by my parents be carried out of my country and liue in exile, before I knew what exile, yea what life was? Was it not (say I) a token of the sparkles of anger which beganne to glister in the heart of Fortune, and a manifest signe that shée began to menace and threaten me some disaster hap in time to come? For I liued not many wéekes after, but I saw the fire flame, which was kindled of the former sparkles, and I tryed the force of her menaces. For before we could reach to anie place where we might soiourne, death bereft me of my deare mother, before nature allowed me to acknowledge the benefit which by her I had and did receiue. This done, Fortune séemed not to haue wreaked her anger sufficiently, and as yet became nothing more méke; for after my mother was buried and her funerall rights celebrated, we came to the village *Cinqueni*, where I was depriued of my father, all the hold of my hope, and the pillar of my welfare. Now Fortune thought her selfe prétily well reuenged against me that neuer had offered her any wrong, and beganne to turne her frownes into smiles, and her anger into fauour. For who can deny but that it was an especial good turne of Fortune, to snatch men out of the cruell clawes of griping death, whereas not one other might escape the rage & furie of the massacring souldiers that were sent to ouerthrow the said village, being the place of our habitation? Vnlesse it be so ý I had some brother who (though I knew him not) receiued the same fauour at Fortune hands that I had, to the ende that after we had both of vs for a time enioyed prosperitie, and bene shrined vp by Fortune, I in the house of the good Sergeant, and he in the Court, we should both of vs fall into the gulphe of extreame miserie, and that being led into aduersitie, féele the effect of Fortunes anger, which for a time she dissembled, fayning to fauour vs, where she procured meanes to wrong vs. But among other calamities, what can be more grœuous vnto me, then to be so separated from my brother (if I may by Natures consent claime any such trifle) that I neuer should haue sœne him yet, nor be like

to see him hereafter? Neither is it a lesse torment for me, that by him I should be brought into these miseries, & that he shuld be cause of all mishap, who no doubt, if he knew it, would if he could redresse my calamitie. But seeing he is not in *Persia* (as the knights that were sent thither do affirme) assuredly some mischiefe hath befallen him, wherewith Fortune hath purposed to worke both our destruction. The gods grant that I may prophesie falsly; though the apparent shewe of all things force me to diuine the contrary. And lastly, this latter pinch of Fortunes spight, in ý she is absent who is the cause that I am present, yea simpliciter that I am, (for without her I had now not bene at all) in rancor doth surpasse all the malice ý hitherto she hath euer endeuoured, laboured, or enterprised against me. Ah sweete Cerasilla, curtuous Cerasilla, yea most louing Cerasilla, how wilt thou blame and accuse me of monstrous ingratefulnesse, if thou suspect that I haue purposely left thée frée wil and counsel; and voluntarily abandoned thée? But I hope thou wilt not holde such opinion of me, but rather impute this hapless chance to Fortune, who hath sworne to make me miserable.

And alasse whither shall I go, or what way shall I take? sithence that swéet guide is taken from me, in whose company I came hither not from imprisonment to libertie, or thraldom to frédom; or from death to life, but rather from one kinde of captiuitie, bondage & death, into another; altering the manner of my misery, not abating the extremitie of my calamitie.

Therewith my brother Philorenus, not able to speake any longer for the multitude of sighes which hée fetched from his heart, and teares which spouted out of his eyes, he wept most bitterly, in which plight I wil leaue him a while, and declare vnto you what Fortune mistresse Cerasilla had: who hauing straied vp and downe the wood a long time, & called for Philorenus as loud as she could, wéeping and lamenting his absence in most græuous maner, at length she espied the cell where I was penned vp by the villains, who had that morning shifted me, and taking my apparell with them to sell it, gaue me an old garment of theirs to couer my body withal; and so leauing

no man but me in the cell, barred the doore on the out side and went their way. And Cerasilla hauing eyed the cell, hoping to find Philorenus my brother there (for she had forgottē her hunger) made hast to draw néer, & knocking at the doore, she heard her first Philorenus speake, for whose cause she made such account of the other being my brother. For when I heard one knocke, I asked who was there: wherupon she answered. Ah swéete Philorenus! (thinking that I was the other whom she had lost, for our voices were not more different then our faces) what art thou there; I must confesse my self beholding to Fortune for this good hap; but why doest not thou let me in? I hauing forgotten her voice, it being altered by reason of the affection wherewith in a lamentable manner she pronounced her words, replied. Whatsoeuer you be whom Fortune hath sent to comfort me after my long imprisonment, if you will sée me, then must you from the outside vndo the doore, and remoue such barres or stops that hinder or let you from entering, seeing I am shut in and come not forth.

Cerasilla maruelling at my spéech, with a knife she cut the string wherewith the cell doore was fastened, and opening the doore asked me where I was; Insomuch that I loking by the light that came in at the doore (for it was dark within) I sawe mistresse Cerasilla stand before the cell, the sight of whose presence cast me into such a trance, that it might haue bin thoght I had bene metamorphosed, as they that loking on Medusas head were transformed into stones. But when Cerasilla saw that I neither came, nor gaue her any answere, she stepped into the cell, where she sawe me lye on the grounde, not only tongue-tyed without speaking, but also leg-tied; being bound with a strōg cord. Which sight thogh it was sufficient to make her lose her wits & become as much altered as I was my self, yet the necessity wherin I was requiring aid, moued her to ouercome her own passions, & to adde her helping hand to wake me out of ẏ extasie wherin I laie. At length being come to my self, I said; Ah what Fortune hath sent thée to this solitary wood to deliuer me frō this misery: Whose presēce is more welcome to me, then if some heauēly goddes had come to lose the bands

to sée him hereafter? Neither is it a lesse torment for me, that by him I should be brought into these miseries, & that he shuld be cause of all mishap, who no doubt, if he knew it, would if he could redresse my calamitie. But séeing he is not in *Persia* (as the knights that were sent thither do affirme) assuredly some mischiefe hath befallen him, wherewith Fortune hath purposed to worke both our destruction. The gods grant that I may prophesie falsly; though the apparent shewe of all things force me to diuine the contrary. And lastly, this latter pinch of Fortunes spight, in ý she is absent who is the cause that I am present, yea simpliciter that I am, (for without her I had now not bene at all) in rancor doth surpasse all the malice ý hitherto she hath euer endeuoured, laboured, or enterprised against me. Ah swéete Cerasilla, curtuous Cerasilla, yea most louing Cerasilla, how wilt thou blame and accuse me of monstrous ingratefulnesse, if thou suspect that I haue purposely left thée frée wil and counsel; and voluntarily abandoned thée? But I hope thou wilt not holde such opinion of me, but rather impute this hapless chance to Fortune, who hath sworne to make me miserable.

And alasse whither shall I go, or what way shall I take? sithence that swéet guide is taken from me, in whose company I came hither not from imprisonment to libertie, or thraldom to frédom; or from death to life, but rather from one kinde of captiuitie, bondage & death, into another; altering the manner of my misery, not abating the extremitie of my calamitie.

Therewith my brother Philorenus, not able to speake any longer for the multitude of sighes which hée fetched from his heart, and teares which spouted out of his eyes, he wept most bitterly, in which plight I wil leaue him a while, and declare vnto you what Fortune mistresse Cerasilla had: who hauing straied vp and downe the wood a long time, & called for Philorenus as loud as she could, wéeping and lamenting his absence in most gréeuous maner, at length she espied the cell where I was penned vp by the villains, who had that morning shifted me, and taking my apparell with them to sell it, gaue me an old garment of theirs to couer my body withal; and so leauing

no man but me in the cell, barred the doꝛe on the out ſide and went their way. And Ceraſilla hauing eyed the cell, hoping to find Philorenus my bꝛother there (foꝛ ſhe had foꝛgottē her hunger) made haſt to dꝛaw néer, & knocking at the doꝛe, ſhe heard her firſt Philorenus ſpeake, foꝛ whoſe cauſe ſhe made ſuch account of the other being my bꝛother. Foꝛ when I heard one knocke, I aſked who was there: wherupon ſhe anſwered. Ah ſwéete Philorenus! (thinking that I was the other whom ſhe had loſt, foꝛ our voices were not moꝛe different then our faces) what art thou there; I muſt confeſſe my ſelf beholding to Foꝛtune foꝛ this good hap; but why doeſt not thou let me in? I hauing foꝛgotten her voice, it being altered by reaſon of the affection wherewith in a lamentable manner ſhe pꝛonounced her woꝛds, replied. Whatſoeuer you be whom Foꝛtune hath ſent to comfoꝛt me after my long impꝛiſonment, if you will ſée me, then muſt you from the outſide vndo the doꝛe, and remoue ſuch barres oꝛ ſtops that hinder oꝛ let you from entering, ſéeing I am ſhut in and come not foꝛth.

Ceraſilla maruelling at my ſpéech, with a knife ſhe cut the ſtring wherewith the cell doꝛe was faſtened, and opening the doꝛe aſked me where I was; Inſomuch that I loking by the light that came in at the doꝛe (foꝛ it was dark within) I ſawe miſtreſſe Ceraſilla ſtand befoꝛe the cell, the ſight of whoſe pꝛeſence caſt me into ſuch a trance, that it might haue bin thoght I had bene metamoꝛphoſed, as they that loking on Meduſas head were tranſfoꝛmed into ſtones. But when Ceraſilla ſaw that I neither came, noꝛ gaue her any anſwere, ſhe ſtepped into the cell, where ſhe ſawe me lye on the grounde, not only tongue-tyed without ſpeaking, but alſo leg-tied; being bound with a ſtrōg coꝛd. Which ſight thogh it was ſufficient to make her loſe her wits & become as much altered as I was my ſelf, yet the neceſſity wherin I was requiring aid, moued her to ouercome her own paſſions, & to adde her helping hand to wake me out of ẏ ertaſie wherin I laie. At length being come to my ſelf, I ſaid; Ah what Foꝛtune hath ſent thée to this ſolitary woꝛd to deliuer me frō this miſery: Whoſe pꝛeſēce is moꝛe welcome to me, then if ſome heauēly goddes had come to loſe the bands

which your moũ delicate fingers haue vntwined, and therewith twisted the knot of the true and sincere loue, where with I most loyally honoured thee for the time that I liued in the court. Ah Cerasilla, had I knowne that thou hadst bin so mindfull of my seruice, and that thou didst accept of the pains or rather panges which I suffered for loue of thée, the calamitie which I haue bene pestred with in this noisome prison for the space of these ten moneths or more, had not bene so græuous vnto me, as it hath bene. For the swéete thought and pleasant conceit which my braines had bene occupied with, in perpending and remembring your excellent beautie & rare vertues, had taken more force in the pareke of my vnderstanding, and so combred my minde with the delightsome memorie of your personage, that it had quite blotted out all thought of ẏ iniury which I haue receiued at Fortunes handes, and expelled all such griefe from my heart which I did take for the pittiful and lamentable entertainment which I haue had in this loathsome cell. Where euer since the second day that I departed from the court for *Persia*, I haue bene compelled to abide, being fallen into the hands of certaine Egyptian théeues, who haunting these woods, violently set vpon me and my men, being either all slaine, or some fled, robbed me of all my treasure and baggage that I had with me.

Now (most excellent Princes and worthie shepheards) did we thinke that we had so troden Fortune vnder foote, that she was not able euer to rise againe, or impaire vs any more. Now liued we as two brothers in all kinde of prosperitie, and so high hoised to the top of blisse, that we litle thought that any power had bene able to cast vs downe and depriue vs of our present felicitie. But alacke we found the contrary by triall, and were compelled to acknowledge our error by experience. Better had it bene for vs with the carefull and wary Mariner to consider that an extraordinary calme, is token of some future tempest to come on the sodaine: for then as he at such times striketh his sailes and shunning the daungerous seas, commendeth his barke to the secure hauen; so we foreseeing

the

the danger vnto which we were subiect in our great prosperitie, might haue escaped the euents which wrought our aduersitie. But seeing things past may be deplored not recalled, and repented, not amended; I must needs say that we bought had I wist, at a deare price: as you shal vnderstand by the sequell of this history. But seeing I haue not yet mentioned any thing concerning my father and the Captaine my brothers father, since that they fled from *Cinqueni*, at the time that wee were brought, and either pittying to kil me outright, or rather supposing they should vse me too curtuously if they ended my misery with death, they haue kept me here in this cell in such maner as you find me; leauing me here this morning, and going to some towne or other to sell the apparell which I had, seeing the mony which they found in my male was much diminished; and their store greatly impaired.

Cerasilla rauished into admiration by the straungenesse of this accident, was doubtfull at the first of me, thinking that I had bene the same Philorenus that came with her from the court, and whose life she had saued by her pollicie; but wel perpending my words, and applying them to the things both passed and present, she remembred that the knightes who were sent into *Persia* said, that they had heard that I had bene seene in a certaine towne within two dayes after I departed from *Naples*, and besides, she did see that I had on other cloaths then the man whom she lost in the woods: which forced her to beleeue me, and to know how she had bene deceiued in taking another man in stead of me. To be short, I will not here make further mention of such congratulations and cherishments as she made mee; leauing it vnto your discretions to iudge how ioyfull men be at such happie meetings. In the meane time, it may please you to vnderstand, that Cerasilla tolde me all that had happened in the Court concerning the other Philorenus, how he had not only my name, but my fauour and my fortune, being borne where I was borne, exiled where I was in exile, and had the same parentes that I had for mine; how that hee was in the court take for all men for me, how that the knights

were sent into *Persia*, and bringing newes that I had not bin there, he was condemned to be torne in péeces by foure horses. And finally how she had deliuered him from daunger of death, and lost him in the wood, supposing that it had bene hée when she heard me speake. Whereat I did the more maruel, by reason that I neuer heard that I had had any brother. But after we had parleyed of all things, fearing least we should be taken togither by the villaines before we were out of sight of that accursed cell, we went into the wood as déep as we could, partly to escape them, & partly to find Philorenus my brother; for as Cerasilla could not be altogither mery for the hard luck that he was lost, so was I exceéding sorrie, by reason that I so greédily desired to sée him; to know whether he were my brother indeéd or no. And as we had for the space of one whole day and night ranged vp and down the same huge wood, at length we purposed to returne to the court, and to certifie the King of all matters, informing his maiestie of the right truth. Hoping that his maiestie would not onely pardon Cerasilla, who was forced by loue to do whatsoeuer she had practised in going away with Philorenus my brother; but also by proclamation recall him again, and the gentlemen in like maner, that were fled to shun his vniust wrath and anger, restoring them their goods and liuings that were confiscated. As in truth his maiestie did. For when we were returned to the court, not without great admiration of the King and Hippolito the yong prince, with all the rest of those that were in the court, and knéeling before his maiestie, had declared the whole estate of all such accidents and euents as had happened, he did not onely pardon Cerasilla, but descending from his chaire of estate embraced me, and so curtuously welcommed mée, that I well perceiued that his maiestie was no otherwise affected towardes me, then he was at my departure from the court.

Furthermore, he rested not, but the same day recalled the gentlemen that had testified how my brother had dwelled with the Sergeant, and not onely restored them their goods and landes, but also bestowed no small gift on the sayd Sergeant

geant my brothers maister; taking order besides, that my brother should also be recalled, promising that assone as he were returned to the court he would knight both him and my selfe: in memoriall of that so rare an example (of two brothers that were so like one the other, the one neuertheless not knowing of the other.)

But I, to reuenge the iniury offered vnto me by those Egyptian theeues, and to punish them according as they for the cause of their abhominable & wicked life merited, I obteined leaue of the king to take one of the companies that laie in garrison in *Naples*, for the custodie and safegard both of the cittie and court; therwith to march to the cell where those villaines had kept me so long, and comming thither we had such good lucke, that we toke them all sauing one being but newly returned to the cell the night before. But missing one of them, I commanded two or thée souldiers to goe into the cell, to sée whether they could finde no more there. They finding none but one being bound in such maner as they had vsed me, thinking that it was some poore man that the villaines had caught (for they could not sée what he was in the cell) brought him forth vnto me, whom I and all the company that was with me presently knew to be the other Philorenus my supposed brother. Which thing so filled my heart with ioy, that I imbraced him before he was vnlosed. He not knowing who I was at ŷ first, maruelled, but after he had heard me declare vnto him how I had found Cerasilla, ŷ had shewed him fauour, he perceiued ŷ I was ŷ same Philorenus whō he was thought to be, & beholding me, at length burst out into these or such like words.

Sir, séeing I neither dreame, nor behold my proportion in a loking glasse, I confesse ŷ both ŷ king had great cause to beare an opinion of me as he did, & these vilains to vse me as they intended. Who méeting me in ŷ wood as I had lost mistres Cerasilla, thinking I had bin ŷ man they robbed & kept in their cell, because I denied I knew neither thē or their cel, they appointed to kil me assone as their felow was returned, whereby I perceiued ŷ you had bin in their hands, & had got frō thē, séeing

they

they could as litle be perſwaded that they neuer had ſéene me as the King and all his courtiers. For in truth I my ſelfe if I had not known as much as by Fortunes frowardneſſe I haue tried, concerning the ſimilitude and likeneſſe betwéene your perſon and my ſelfe, I would now haue thought that you had bin of the nature of the glaſſe that receiueth the colour of euery obiect bodie: whereas you ſay that the Gods ſtriue againſt Fortune to free vs from her frowardneſſe, I am conſtrained to ſay no leſſe, ſéeing that it hath pleaſed their Deitie by him to loſe me from this inſtant danger of death, by reaſon of whom (though not by his procurement,) all my troubles & miſeries toke beginning. Wherefore ſéeing that our lucke is ſuch that as the euill ſucceſſe of your fortune was cauſe of my miſerie, ſo the recouerie of your hap hath bred my bliſſe, and deliuered me from the extreame perill wherein my life was placed. What may I ſay leſſe, but that the Gods knowing how we haue by Fortune bene wronged, haue reſkued vs from her furie.

But becauſe it would be long for me to rehearſe, and tedious for you to heare the end of this his ſpeech, & the other talke which we had betwéene vs, concerning ſuch matters as had happened by reaſon of our great likeneſſe, I will only tel you, that after we had had ſome conference touching our parentes and other matters, we cauſed thoſe Egyptian villaines to be tied to the horſe tailes, and ſo trayled along the ground til we came to *Naples*, where the hangman ſaued his labour, ſéeing that no perſon thought hée had done his duetie vnleſſe hée had helped to pull and teare the fleſh off ſome part of thoſe Egyptian wretches that had cauſed ſuch confuſion, and bene to worke ſo much harme, had not the foreſight of the mercifull Gods hindred their intent. In ſo much that within two houres that theſe Egyptian ſlaues had entered the gates of the Citie, they were by the people halled and pulled into a thouſand péeces.

I will not here make long rehearſall, how honourably my brother was vſed by the King, but it ſhall be ſufficient if I declare how that the King after he had welcommed my brother in all curteous maner with a pleaſant countenance, as well

bewraying

bewraying grace and mildenesse, as maiestie and glorie, remembring his promise made vnto me in word, did performe no lesse in deede; and knighted vs both togither the same day. Where I was brought from thence to *Naples*, I meane first to let you know what lucke they had in their flight, before I go any further in declaring the successe wée had, so securely triumphing in the court, after we were deliuered frõ so much misfortune and euill hap as for a time we suffered, onely by the malice of those Egyptians villains which were suborned by Fortune to shake the foundation of our felicitie.

When *Cinquent*, the place whence we were brought to *Naples*, was by the soldiers sent by the king to execute his wrath on the inhabitants thereof, pilled and spoyled, Coreandro my father thinking that I was dead, (for he had heard that none in all the vilage were left aliue, neither men, womẽ, nor children, and he did not know that I was saued by a Captain and led vnto *Naples*) thought to returne home againe to his country, and there liue among his friends, séeing he had no other comfort in the world, being by Fortunes pestilent hatred, bereft not of goods onely, but of wife and childe also. Insomuch that he hauing resolued to returne home to the place of his birth, toke his way from the said village along the coastes of *Italy* towards *Aragon*, where after he had marched one day, the next morning rising betimes, to take the aduantage of cole Aurora, before Phœbus rayes compelled the trauellers to séeke for shadow amidst their iourny, he passed through a little short wood, where he heard the other Coreandro the good Captaine my brothers father, lament his hard lucke, on this maner.

Ah Fortune! men paint thée standing vppon a gloabe, as thereby designing thy inconstancy; which their opinion made me alwaies deceiue my selfe with vaine hope, trusting that you would once turne your frowardnesse into louingnesse, and your frownes into fauours. But I perceiue thou hast made choyce of me by experience of mine owne miseries and aduersitie, to oppose my selfe against all men in thy defence, séeing

that whereas they all generally holde opinion that thou art the very essence of inconstancie and mutabilitie, each one particularly exclaiming vpon thée, and blaming thée for thy fléeting vnstableneſſe, I in contrary manner am forced and compelled to affirme against them all, that thou art not inconstant or vnstable; but rather too much constant, persisting and stiffe in thy purpose, hard to be mooued; stiffe-necked, continuing to the end, tough, and hard to be ouercome.

All which may bee manifestly proued by the course of my life, by the aduentures which by thy appoyntment haue chanced and happened vnto me. Which all of them haue bene so vnhappie, so infortunate, and so vnluckie, that it were a hard matter to iudge which of them deserueth the superioritie in name and title of infelicitie. In all which my aduersities thou hast so constantly remained in thy enuious & malicious frowardneſſe, that in this my latter mishap thou hast not any whit deflected or turned aside from that crueltie which thou didst vse against me in all my other misfortunes. What shall I then say? Shall I call thée constant because I am forced to say that thou art inconstant or mutable? No, no, constancy is too laudable a vertue to be attributed to such a spightfull and hard-necked Goddeſſe. Thou art not constant, because not inconstant, for the extremitie which corrupteth the vertue, is opposite to vertue; as well as vertue contrarie to vice. Insomuch that I cannot attribute vnto thée the name of constant, vnleſſe it be in enuie, spight and crueltie, for so thou art euer, and in hatred, rancor, and malice, doest thou continue alwayes. Thy delight is to sée others grieued, thy sport to sée others spurned with the kicke of aduersitie; thy playe to sée others pained; thy pleasure consisteth in plaguing them that implore thy help. Thou laughest at them that weepe; for their mishaps to moue thée to pitie, thou scornest them that honour thée; thou mockest them that praise thee; thou deceiuest them that trust to thee; thou abusest thẽ that flatter thée; & them that despise thée, thou endeuourest to be reuenged of them; though they of all others least care for thy might, least fear thy power,

and

and therefore are least iniured by thée. Fret at thē thou maist and fome, stare and stamp, but hurt them thou canst not, for it passeth thy deitie to ouerthrow them that with true patience, forbearance and sufferance, shield and arme themselues against thy spight and rancor. Therefore séeing that those that inuoke thée most religiously, are most vnrightuously by thée iniured: that those that most deserue to be rewarded by thée, are most punished: and that those that account most of thée, and thinke of thée most reuerently, are most neglected, and most villainously dealt withall by thée. I that haue thus long most zealously made thy aultar smoake, by reason of the incense which I haue alwayes from my cradle offered vnto thée, will and do now forsake and leaue thée, as knowing at last, and acknowledging the errour and heresie wherewith I haue thus long bene infected. Hereafter shall not Coreandro serue thée any more, or offer thée sacrifice, séeing thou hast not only spoyled him of his goods and riches, but also depriued him first of his deare and welbeloued Delbia, and now at last, of his most louing Philorenus, whome thou hast appointed to bée most barbarously killed and murthered in his childehood, and left me aliue to bewaile and lament his vntimely death.

My father hearing this latter ende of the Captaines plaintes, maruelling what hée might bee that so rayled at Fortune for an other mans mishappe and mischance, for he hauing heard him repeate the iniurie which shée had offered Coreandro, hée thought hée had meant of himselfe, went into a certaine thicket where hée sawe the man that so blamed and exclaimed against Fortune, for her seuere and cruell dealings with Coreandro, in depriuing him of his lawfull wife Delbia, and his welbeloued sonne Philorenus: but because hée knew him not, nor remembred that he had euer séene him before that time, maruelled greatly what he should be, and how he came to knowe him and me, for he had heard him name both him and me.

Wherefore after he had well looked vpon him and throughly beheld him, he spake vnto him in this order.

Sir, I pray you not to be displeased with me for pressing so nére you, séeing the cause which moueth me thereunto, proceedeth not from malice or intent to trouble or iniury you any way, but rather from loue and affection, desiring and wishing to comfort or pleasure you according to my power; which by Fortunes frowardnesse is so impaired and weakned, that my good will is more to be regarded then my abilitie. I perceiue by your face and heauie countenaunce, that you haue some cause to exclaime against Fortune either for your selfe or for some other. But by ỹ way, I am moued by the remembrance of the good amitie & great friendship which in times past hath bene betwixt me and Coreandro (whose mishap in losing his wife and sonne, I heard you so pitifully lament) to be so bolde as aske you why Coreandros case so greeueth you, as that hee himselfe could not more bewaile his owne misfortune, or be more gréeued thereat, then you are?

The good Captaine not knowing my father, more then he was knowne by my father, framed him this answere. Good sir, though I had had any occasion (as I haue had none) to be displeasured by your comming vnto me, yet by reason that you haue bene so well acquainted with Coreandro as you say, your comming vnto me could not but haue bene so welcome vnto me, that all displeasure would quickly haue bin banished and forgotten. For the great loue and affection which I beare vnto that man, and did beare to his wife Delbia, and his sonne Philorenus, aboue all other creatures in the world, is the cause that I so lament and bewaile his miserable and pitifull mishap. Wherefore séeing that I haue answered your question, I pray you tell me where you haue bene so acquainted with Coreandro? Where (quoth my father) in *Spaine*, in *Aragon*, in *Italy*, at *Cinquent*, and in euery place where Coreandro himselfe hath bene, in so much that he was no where, but I was with him, nor I any where but he was by me. But I pray you (quoth my brothers father) doe you knowe him if you

you see him? Should I not know him (quoth my father?) As well as my selfe. Why then (quoth the Captaine my brothers father) you knowe that I am Coreandro, doe you not? Nay (quoth my father) rather do you know that I am ỹ man. Then I perceiue (said the other) that you came to mock with me; and so intreated me not to be displeased with you, intending to giue me cause of displeasure before you meant to depart from me. Nay verily (answered my father) now I marke what the matter is; you know that I was to passe this way, and therfore you came to this place to lament the misfortunes of Coreandro, to draw and entice me to come vnto you, and so to be mocked and laughed at. But know whatsoeuer thou art, that if thou be so fauoured of Fortune, that thou challengest license to scoffe at them that by Fortunes spight are forced to greeue for their crosse hap, thou maist so be punished by the iust iudgement of the reuenging gods, that thou shalt be moued to cry *peccaui* too late; and to acknowledge thy offence when it will be too late for thee to repent.

The good Captaine hearing my father so earnest, wist not what he might thinke of the matter; but he began to remember that his wiues first husband was called Coreandro, and that her had a sonne also called Philorenus. But because he thought that he had bene dead long ago, he could not thinke that it should be he; especially because it seemed by him how that he had dwelt at *Cinquent*, and that his sonne Philorenus (that is my selfe) should haue bene killed of the same souldiers that had slaine his owne sonne, who was also called *Philorenus*, for the reason which alreadie hath bene told you. For it seemed scarce credible vnto him, that the other Coreandro and his sonne whom he thought both to haue bene dead sithence, should haue liued so neere him, and that he should not haue heard of him; yet he thought best to set aside all anger, that if chance it were he, he might shun all occasion of strife or immoderate speaches: and therefore though he saw my father so hotte, yet he nothing changed, spake thus coly vnto him. Sir, I neither knew of your comming by this way, nor euer sawe

you or knew you before to my knowledge, and therefore the gods punish me with their wrath, if I either scoffe or mocke with you; but as I came from *Cinqueni*, being ouer-burdened with the sorrowe which I conceiue for the losse of my childe which was killed at the sayd village by the barbarous souldiers, I entring into this groue, was forced by the multitude of my miseries and greatnesse of my griefe, to raple at that most cruell Goddesse Fortune, who taketh delight to glut her selfe with the ouerthrow of mortall men. And was your sonne (quoth my father) called Philorenus? Yea that he was quoth he; and was your wife (quoth my father) called Delbia? She was, answered he againe. Why then (quoth my father) if thou be Coreandro, thy wife Delbia, and thy sonne Philorenus, what shall I be, with my Delbia, and my Philorenus? For if I am not Coreandro, that had to wife Delbia, by whom I begot Philorenus now massacred at *Cinqueni*, heauen plague me.

The good Knight hearing my father so solemnly protest that hée was Coreandro, desired him to make him some copious and true relation of his life, what hée was, where hée was borne, in what place he was married, and by what Fortune he was brought into *Italy*; and how that then he would satisfie him in all poyntes, and so content and certifie him, that hée should not onely knowe that hée did not iest nor mock with him, but also confesse and acknowledge, that hée had verie great reason rather to thinke himselfe mocked of him.

Whereuppon my father verie largely rehearsed vnto him the whole discourse and history of his life; whereby the good Knight knewe that hée was that Coreandro whome hée thought had bene dead, and therefore had married his wife Delbia, by whome hée had his sonne Philorenus. And presently hée tolde my father all whatsoeuer had happened and chaunced betweene my mother Delbia and him, how hée saued and kept her from the villanie which the King of *Castile* intended to vse against my mother, how hée brought her to

her

her village house to looke for him, and not finding him there, they went to the Cittie *Targonna*, to seeke him there: and how they afterwardes vnderstood of certaintie that hée was dead, as he could verifie and proue by diuerse of his wiues friendes at the Cittie of *Targonna*. Besides hée told my father in like manner, comming out of the Castle to escape the better, called himselfe Coreandro. And when he was come forth, he being credibly certified of his death, married Delbia, and that he had within a yeare after a sonne by her, whom shée would haue also named Philorenus, in remembrance of her first Philorenus, whome shée supposed to be dead. In a word, hée left nothing vntolde, but let him know, the cause of his wife my mothers death, was his voyage to *Cinqueni*, and all other things that hapned euen till their méeting. Whereat my father reioyced greatly, partly for that hée heard such particularities of his wife, of whome what was become, he neuer had heard any certaintie, and partly also, because hée was disburthened of that heauie loade of false suspition bred, by reason of the King of *Castiles* odious proclamation made against my mother Deluia. For vntill the verie houre that the good Knight the other Coreandro my brother Philorenus his father, had informed him of the true veritie of all matters concerning my mother Delbia, did he verily thinke and perswade himselfe that my mother of wantonnesse me got secretly away from the King of *Castile*, not to seeke him her husband, but to runne away with the Knight, and leaudly to liue with him, setting aside and quite giuing ouer her kinde loue, and amiable kindnesse which she was wont to professe vnto her quondam deare husband. And therfore now knowing the contrarie, although he made exceeding sorrow for her death, yet the perswasion which reason by means of the good knights true and not dissembled relation, had ingrafted in his heart of her royaltie, did not a little comfort him in this his singular perplexitie, both for the losse of so good a wife and so deare a sonne. And besides all this, the companie of so valiaunt and worthie a Knighte and vertuous a person,

(in

(in all points as litle beholding to Fortune for prosperitie as himselfe, seeing they both lamented the death of one woman, and especially the pittifull mishap of vs their sonnes (thinking that we were massacred at *Cinqueni*,) which were vnto each of them most pleasant obiects to remember their Delbia our mother, and most sure paynes & tokens of her chaste and loyall loue towards them our fathers) did breed him such solace, that he thanked the gods for bestowing so much comfort vpon him in this his latter and greatest extremitie. In like maner, the good knight Don Aluaro de Bazora of late Coreandro, powring out teares incessantly for ioy of his good hap in méeting so luckely with my father, thought himself in ample maner beholding to the gods for that singular benefit, protesting that he could not being in that case, haue wished for a more blessed day, then that wherein he so happily met with my father. Thus ioyning in company, they marched together towards the citie *Targonna* in *Aragon*, intending there to liue and die together, enioying each others presence, glad each of others company, hauing each of them his sonne.

Where I wil leaue them in this their iourny, & returne to the rest of mine owne Fortunes and my brothers, who now both of vs were lifted vp to high estate, and so prosperously liued in all kinde of soueraigne pleasure, that we thought it as possible for Fortune to abase the greatnesse of our weale, as for vs to impaire the diuine estate of the heauenly powers. But to the end that I may let you vnderstand how sone we were forced to recal our minds from that heresie, it may please you most excellent Princesse and noble shepheardes, to know that we (I meane my brother and I) liuing in this most happie estate, beganne by reason of our great leisure which the peaceable quietnesse of the Neapolitan estate yelded vs, so to giue our selues to all kinde of sports and pleasures, that wée thought that day ill spent, wherein we had not inuented some new delight to pleasure our mistresses withall. Now we inuented new kindes of daunces, now strange maners of bawting, now neuer before such séene, Maskes, now new deuised,

Enterludes

Enterlades, and in one word, all kinde of toyes that Italian wits had bred in times past, we either altered or augmented: wherein we vsed such dexteritie, that we seemed to haue bene born to that purpose. But howsoeuer we behaued our selues therein, we were so liked of all the Courtiers of both sexes, that our company was thankfull to all men, and shunned by no man. The King, the Quéene, & Hippolito the yong prince, so loued and fauoured vs, that they would not deny vs anie thing that we could aske. And we, as we had found our selues to be brothers (hauing the same name, parents, country, shape, and Fortune) so we swore euerlasting friendship and allea-geance, one to another, so louing on the other, that though I know that it were impossible for any man in the world so to loue any one as I loued him, yet am I forced by the consider-ation of his wonderfull deserts towardes me, and by the tryall which I haue had of his loyaltie, to doubt whether my loue or his were the greatest. And because we would in all things be alike, and deprine the world of all meanes to know and dis-cerne one of vs from the other, we continually apparelled our selues alike, both in the same colour, fashion, and order. In so much that it was as hard for the best discerning wit, that all the world could bring forth, to know the one from the other, or to finde any difference betweene vs. Which thing as gene-rally it troubled most of all the Courtiers, so particularly it was cause of mistresse Cerasillas death, who (as I told you be-fore) bearing me good will, & taking my brother for me, when she [illegible] him out of prison saued his life, and hauing lost him in the wood, afterwards also deliuered me from the villai-nous Egyptians, and so was cause of all our blisse. This poore [illegible] woman louing vs both excellently well, and deseruing [illegible]e to be honoured of vs, for verie sorrow that she could [illegible]ert me from my brother, pined and falling into a con-sumption, died. Whereof though we were passing sorrie, yet the youthfulnesse of our yong hearts, receiuing the impres-sion of the beautie of a certaine yong Gentlewoman sister to Countesse Verina, quickly forgot the funeralles of mistresse

Cerasilla. Yet because we could not but acknowledge that we were in great sort beholding vnto her, we bestowed this Epitaph vpon her.

Sweete sweetneſſe li'th beneath this marble ſtone,
Which prai'th all louing hearts her death to mone.
Her flow'r is fall'n, thogh vvere her yeares but greene:
When life moſt ſvveet, ſhe bitter death hath ſeene.
We that of her, this here haue vvritten in:
Had but for her, novv neither of vs bin.

Phi *nus.*
By *lore*
Phi *nus.*

But leauing her in her ſepulchre, I will return to Comteſſe Verina her ſiſter, who being a moſt beautifull yong gentlewoman, named miſtreſſe Aureola, ſo enchanted my minde by the commanding force of her ſweet face and ſugred tongue, that I admiring the much decent colour of the one, and the well gouerned volubilitie of the other, was ſo rauiſhed in the pleaſing delight which her perfections cauſed in my hart, that I iudged no woman faire, none witty, and none eloquent but golden Aureola. Who as ſhe paſſed all women in comelineſſe of bodie, and pure ſnowlike whiteneſſe of ſkin, ſo none came neare her in thoſe hidden qualities which breed in the braine and noſtred in the heart, are made knowne by the tongue. But to be ſhort, ſuch were her graces both inward and outward, that they pierced my heart in ſuch manner, that I was fo[rced] to acknowledge my ſelfe her ſeruant, and Cupids captiuing ſubdued by his pollicie in vſing the imperiall beame of her beautie, in ſtead of darts to infringe and breake the priuiledge of my libertie. Well, I loued Aureola, and ſo loued Aureola, that for the loue of Aureola I could haue hated my ſelfe.

I then being in this case, began to imploy my braines in searching out manner, and procuring meanes to make my affection knowne to the saint I so truelily honoured. And truly in short time not Aureolas selfe only, but my brother also, began to perceiue the fire which being kindled in my heart, did cast out such a cloude of loue-smoake. Now I glad that Aureola knew the manner of my sickneſſe, but gladder that shée seemed not male-content of my welcontentednesse, and nothing displeased that my brother was acquainted with my passion, seeing that he was an Alterego, my selfe in, I will not say another bodie, (for it was too like mine to be differenced) but another place; thought my selfe the happiest man that lined.

We may iudge how much more blessed I would haue accounted my selfe to haue bene, if I might haue doubled my single life by marriage with her. Vnto whome I to laie open the paine which punisht my heart for the cauſe of her, I sought occasion very diligently. In so much that opportunitie being presented vnto me within a fewe dayes after, and espying her walking by her selfe and the trés alone in the gardaine, where her sisters lodging was, I thought it but a negligent part to omit that fortunate houre, and therefore knowing that the Countesse her sister was gone to the quéen, I posted to my mistresse wᵗ a sound courage, hoping to return victorious or hearing hope of victorie. Into the Gardaine I stepped, and hauing set on halfe a dosin paces forewards towards her, I might sée her turne, being at the ende of the walke. Whose heauenly face so dazeled mine eyes with the glaunce which shée cast from the other end of the Gardaine, that I sone acknowledged that no Sunne could so haue dimmed my eyes, but the double Titan which like two little worldes of grace are such ornamentes to her face, that as they are beholding to it for that it bourdeth them, so is it bounden vnto them because it is by them adorned and beautified.

At length I came so neare her, that maners warned me to salute her, though I was so astonished at her celestiall shape, that I could moze fire mine eyes to behold her with admiration, then fashion my mouth to salute her with ciuilitie. Yet loue taught me to beware of committing so foule and grosse a fault, as not to giue her a curtuous good mozrow, who was the efficient of my disquiet euenings. Therefoze greeting her after the humblest and louingst maner my passion forced me, she answered me after this maner. Good mozrow sir knight, you are very matticuous this mozning, whatsoeuer the cause be; But I pray you what weather drawe you towardes these quarters so early? Truly, madame (quoth I) my good fortune: seeing I haue met with no worse company then your swéete selfe. For as I passed by the gardeine wall, by chance loking ouer it with a long necke, I espied you walking by your selfe alone, and so I thought it good maners to step neare and giue you the buen giorno. And if I thought that my boldnesse in pressing so neare you, perhaps in such time as you had rather giue respite to your solitary delight, then otherwise be troubled, should offend you, as I came intending not to displease you, so I would depart without performing any thing whereby you might haue occasion to be discontented. No, no, sir knight (quoth she) beshrew me if euer I could be offended with good company, neither haue I any such melancholy humour as to delight in being alone, but that sometimes I am compelled to be solitary for lacke of good company. And then I muse of necessitie walke alone, and decreake my selfe with viewing natures diligent busnesse in beautifying the earth with such pleasant ornaments and faire tapistry, as passeth all artificiall industry. I mean these fine hearbes & floures, which both in smell and colour so delightes humane sences, that we must needs acknowledge our selues beholding to Dame Nature for presenting vs with such a worthy kinde of delectation. But you are now come euen in good time, to let me know your opinions in one thing that I am breaking my braine vpon. What is that Madame quoth I? Mary (quoth she) this.

You

here Vio s, Roses, and Lilies, growing all togither in one place, I haue bene musing with my self a great while, which of all these three shuld beare away the praise, if question were made which of them were the fineſt floure: for I promise you, in my minde they seeme to striue each with other in excellency. They do verily Madame (quoth I) and seeing you desire to haue my foolish verdite in iudgement of their excellency, I thinke we ought in this case to haue a regard vnto Natures intent, and take aduice of her who seemeth to vse pollicie in the maner of the growing of these flowers; that the Rose bush groweth thicke and vntowardly, the Rose budding out in diuerse places without order, & seemeth rather to serue for a wall or hedge to enuiron other flowers, as is apparant by the intent of him that hath planted these Roses as the curtaine running about the bed where he placed his Lillies. In like maner the Violet groweth also confusedly and low close to the ground to betoken humilitie, and so the Gardiner hath planted them in this place, to be as it were the foote-cloth and couerlet to shrowde the homely face of the earth from the glorious aspect of the stately Lilies, which growing most proudly on one stalke, being erected most straightly & bearing maiestie, seeme to challenge the supremacie. In so much Madam, that my opinion following the intent both of Nature and the planter, is to crowne the Lilly with the garland bearing title of the fineſt flower, as vnto which, I deeme all flowers inferiour for diuerse respects. And therefore no doubt did Iuno the queene of heauen, challenge the Lilly as properly belonging to her, calling it her Rose: for thereby hath and is the Lilly yet called Iunonis Rosa. By my faith sir Philorenus (quoth she) you haue said prittily well as touching this matter. But yet me thinkes we ought to consider the inwarde vertue of the flowers as well as the outward brauery. The Lilly is stately indeed, but yet the Rose it serueth for many good vses, and being either preserued or conserued, is kept along while in Pothicaries shoppes, to be ministred vnto men in their sickneſſe, whereas the Lilly onely serueth for the sences of smelling or

sight, and being fully opened, is either with the wind blowne off, or withereth and decaieth in the pride of Phœbus, being mounted in his noone-poynt. Nay but Madame (quoth I,) I thinke you formed your question which was the fineſt flower, which I meant not for the vertues or naturall efficacie of the flower, but rather the exteriour shape and shew therof. And yet I doubt not but the Lilly hath many hidden and secret vertues; for I haue heard that the water of the same flower, yea and of the hearbe thereof, is verie good for diuerse purposes; which by happe you better know then I my selfe, séeing they be peculiar and propper to your sexe. Well, well, (quoth shée) be it so sir Philorenus; But as you well mentioned, I vnderstand the matter as you doe, and moue not the question for the interiour qualitie, but for the exteriour accidents.

Compare then the Roase to the Lilly, what fairer sight can the cleareſt discerning eye sée then a Roase, so prouidently formed by Nature, that it séemeth rather to be some artificiall collection of leaues wrought by Science, then a naturall budde spreading it selfe abroad, and making shewe of such a glorious beautie as all the learnedst workemen of *Italy* cannot do the like.

I perceiue Madame (quoth I) that you are an especiall fauorite to the Roase, but for my part the Lilly shall beare away the honour; for if you stand vppon the forme or fashion of the flower, I pray you how can a fairer or better made flower be séene then the Lilly; which being made in the forme of a bell with the clapper in it, hath bene by diuerse Ladies called *Campana virginea*, the virgins bell. And to say no leſſe then is true, mée thinkes it well deserueth the same name, séeing it doth in stately growth, resemble the wel-fashioned proportion and stately countenance of maydes, in colour their whiteneſſe, and in the yellowneſſe of the séed, their golden lockes of their glorious haire. Insomuch that diuerse parts are beholding vnto the Lilly for arguments of similitude and comparison which it yéeldeth them, therby to expresse and commend the

whiteneſſe

whiteneſſe of diuerſe gentlewomen, whoſe praiſes they penned, ſaying they were Lilly white, like Lilies ſtately, ſoft and ſlicke as Lillies, and as the Lilly ſo ſwéet. And to auer a verie truth, what is there of all ſwéet ſents comparable to the ſwéet ſwéetneſſe of the Lilly? May ſtaie there ſir Philorenus (quoth ſhe) for what ſwéeter ſmell can the niceſt noſe wiſh for, then that which the Roſe yéeldeth? For in my iudgement the Roſe caſteth the moſt glowingſt ſmel of any flower. The moſt glowingſt ſmell indéed madame quoth I: for it is ſo forcible and ſtrong a ſent, that it giueth ſufficient notice to men, that it is bitter in taſte. And to ſay that which muſt be ſaid, in my phantaſie it giueth too ſtrong a ſmell to be compared to the ſugred ſwéetneſſe, and ſwéete delicateneſſe of the daintie Lilly, which yéeldeth the choyceſt ſmell and moſt fragrant ſent that can be. But in the meane time ſir Philorenus, while you for the Lilly, and I for the Roſe, the forgotten Violet may iuſtly complaine of the wrong we offer it, that we ſo contend and ſtriue to ſet forth the praiſe of the Roſe & the Lilly, that we giue no commendation vnto it, though it deſerue to be highly eſtéemed: notwithſtanding that you before ſaid, ỳ it grew low in token of baſeneſſe. And ſéeing you do ſo ſtoutly ſtand for your ſtately Lily, méethinke I dar[illegible] neuertheleſſe compare the baſe Violet as you terme it, to the proude Lilly. For doth not the ſwéete Mariarame grow lower then the ranke Fenne? And yet how far the lower excell the taller in ſwéetneſſe & vertue you will not, nay you cannot deny. In like maner the fragrant Time, ſo beloued of ỳ painful, groweth cloſe to the ground where the broome ſprouteth very high; yet is the Tyme of other vertue then the broome. And ſo of many more flowers which I néede not mentiõ, ſéeing one or two may ſerue for an inſtance to falſifie your ſmal reaſons. But I pray madam (quoth I) deale not ſo ſophiſtically with me, as to argue a *Maleconiunctis*. For I ſay not ỳ the Lily is ỳ fineſt flower becauſe it groweth vpeſt, for ſo I wold grant my reaſon were but fondly grounded, nether do I ſay ỳ the Lily deſerue ỳ head praiſe amõg al flowers bicauſe it groweth not cõfuſedly but in decent & comly order; for

there

there are many floures that growing disorderly, in sweetnesse of sent surpasse diuerse wel ranked flowers. And lastly say I, not that the Lilly is the excellentest flower, because it is so sweete a flower; but thus I forms my reason. That, stately statelinesse, white whitenesse, gallant gallantnesse, and sweet sweetnesse, all these predominant qualities iumping togither in the braue Lilly, make her worthie to be honoured as the fairest, finest, and brauest flower that Nature hath framed.

By this, the Countesse Verina being come to her lodging, mistresse Aureola was to retire from the gardain to her sister, and so I was forced to leaue her, so hauing mist of my purpose and no time to breake my minde vnto her in plaine words, although amidst our well agreeing altercation concerning the excellency of flowers, I vsed such passionate lookes that shee might haue perceiued as much of me as she did before. Yet howsoeuer she thought of it I know not, but our parting was so amiable, that after I had lost the sight of her, I felt that I parted from her without parting. For my bodie might well be separated and conteined within some other place then hers, but as for my mind, whersoeuer she went, that followed her as trustily as her owne shadow.

In the meane time (excellent Princes and worthie shepheards) you may note that my brother loued her (I meane my golden Aureola) as entirely as I my selfe, his loue being vnknowne to me. For though he knew that I loued her, yet was I as yet not acquainted with the loue that he bore Aureola. And in truth, because he knew that she was the onely aire by which I liued, rather then he would do any thing that might procure my disquiet, resolued himselfe to die for loue of Aureola, rather then he should opportunate Aureola to loue him, and to depriue me of that without which I could not liue. In so much that although he loued her, that for her he would willingly haue yelded to death, and resigned his life, yet he no way to offend me, did not only conceale his loue from Aureola, but also occasion being offered him to talke with her, did spend all that time in commendation of me, protesting vnto

her

her that I was so faithfull, constant, and loyall, that if shée would daine to reward my loue with loue, and if she did loue me she should haue cause to glorie of her hap in fancying him, and placing her loue on him, who would prooue the faithfullest Amant that was in *Italy*.

Besides this, he made diuerse verses in praise of her, and togither with sundrie braue and precious iewels presented them vnto her, saying that I had sent them; whereas in truth I knew not any thing of them. In so much that more by his industrie, then mine owne diligence (though I neglected no dutifull seruice required in that case) at length I obteined the loue of mine Aureola. For she loued me so affectionately, that I might iudge her loue to be of as great force as mine, thogh indéed it was of such nature, that it was diuided betweéne vs both, I meane my brother and me, for we being so like one to the other, that we seemed to be but one, we could not shunne recipprocation in loue; but whosoeuer loued me, could not but loue him, and whosoeuer loued him, could not but loue me. And although I had certainly knowne that Aureola loued my brother equally with me, as wel as I did but gesse that it was so, yet had I bene nothing sorie, but rather reioyced greatly that I had obteined so faire a Lady to be both my loue, and my brothers friend. For in veritie such was my affection towards him, that I could not wish any thing to my selfe wholly, without wishing part of it vnto my brother, being most readie alwaies willingly to part from any thing which I knew he wished, and with a good heart to cease and leaue from desiring or wishing any such thing whatsoeuer he had a minde vnto. But my brother marking that Aureola could not tell which of vs two she loued best, or which of vs was most worthie of her loue, and thereby equally loued vs both, was verie sorie, fearing least I might be greeued that I did not my self onely enioy all the loue of Aureola. And therefore he began to exhort me to seeke meanes to be ioyned vnto her in marriage, thinking that so shée should be forced to withdraw her loue from him, and wholly be addicted to me being her wedded husband.

To effect which matter, hée continually vrged Aureola to make promiſe of mariage vnto me, very forcibly perſwading her thereto; and telling her that I who thought my life no life but in reſpect of hers, ſhould neuer be able to liue perfectly vntill ſuch time that I being vnited and tyed vnto her by the knotte of wedlocke, might enioy her as my wife: vntill which thing were brought to paſſe, I ſhould liue a moſt lamentable life full of balefull diſcontent.

Furthermore he promiſed her, that if ſhe would vouchſafe to condeſcend to my honeſt deſire, and his earneſt requeſt, hée would moue the King and Quéene to deale with her ſiſter the Counteſſe and her other friendes, about the contracting of this marriage, and obtaine their good will and conſent thereto. Aureola, although ſhe was very vnwilling to do ſo, yet becauſe he ſhould not thinke that ſhe would not grant my requeſt for ý ſhe equally loued him with me, ſéemed to grant our requeſt, and to be willing to haue the marriage contriued betwéene her and my ſelfe. Yet ſhe would not haue any mention made of it vnto any of the Court till thrée monethes were ended, for certain reſpects which moued her to conceale the matter ſo long. Which were none other (as afterwardes we knew by experience) but ſuch as procéeded from her owne vnwillingneſſe to be tyed to me, and ſo to be depriued of the loue of my brother. For as it afterwards was manifeſted, ſhe ſo loued vs both, that ſhe wiſhed in her heart that ſhe might haue bene married to vs both; thinking that ſhe ſhould not perfectly haue enioyed one of vs, if any other woman had bin married to the other, iudging that we were both but one, and ought not to be ſeparated. And therfore aboue all other things did ſhe deſire ý ſhe were beloued of vs both, ſéeing we were both ſo engraued in her heart, that ſhe might not thinke of the one, without remembring the other.

But my brother thinking that Aureola had a bonneſoy purpoſed after the time of thrée monethes expired, to marry with me, made me glad with the newes which he brought me of her mind; although himſelfe therwith was vtterly ſpoiled

of

of his felicitie and welfare: which I came to knowe by this meanes. It happened euen vpon the expiring of the thrée moneths, on a certaine morning betime, that I rising something early, walked abroad in the fields without the Cittie, to a little wood not far off, to recreate my selfe with a solitarie walk, being as it were wearied with the turbulent multitude of people, both Citizens and Courtiers. Which wood, when I had but euen entered my thought, I heard one sorely lamenting his estate, and by the voyce knowing that it was my brother, I listned very attentiuely to know the cause of his complaintes, whome I heard thus to crie out against fickle Fortune.

Yea Fortune, yea; Thou art mistresse, and wilt be mistresse, Philorenus must testifie the same: and register in the bottome of his heart that he was borne to be crossed by Fortune. I thought that the Gods had forbidden thée to vexe me any more, but I perceiue thou wilt do what thou wilt, thogh heauen deny. But accursed maist thou be of heauen, earth, and hell, for so denying mortall wights, that thou séemest to haue no deitie, but such which is procured by the glorie which thou takest in making men miserable. Yet why do I so blame fortune, séeing that if another man were in my case, he would thinke himselfe infinitely beholding to her, in causing all thinges to fall out so agréeing to his humour. For thou louest Aureola, how much thou knowest; then, séeing thou hast had sufficient token of her loue towardes thée, and considering that he that loueth, desireth nothing so much as mutually to be loued of her whome he doeth loue: how canst thou complaine of Fortune? Againe, when your mind was such, that you wished her to be wholly your brothers, and desired that she should be his wife, you sée all things happen to your pleasure, considering that Aureola hath promised to marry her selfe to him; and yet you will exclaime against Fortune. All this is true. But the hagge doth let all things fall out according to my mind, knowing that in doing so, she doth most torment mée. For she hath made my life so miserable, that no

content can be harboured in my diſquiet breaſt, being the very habitacle of reſtleſſe thoughtes. And in this thing, is the meanes which ſhe vſeth in vexing me, contrary to all other miſhaps and euils, in that ſhe vexeth me with effecting thoſe things, the effect of which, I moſt wiſh for and deſire. Which thing how ſtraunge it is, I leaue to the conſideration of thoſe that haue the vſe of their wits, ſeeing by Fortunes enuy I am my ſelfe depriued of that benefit. Alacke, what ſhall then poore Philorenus do, ſeeing he is ſo entangled in the loue of Aureola, that he muſt either die or enioy her as his owne? And yet ſo loueth his brother (who cannot in like maner liue if ſeparated from the ſame Aureola,) that he wil die a thouſand deaths rather then be diſloyall vnto him. Die therefore Philorenus, die; and ſeeing there are not as well two Aureolas as there be two Philorenes, make thy ſelfe lifeleſſe and thy brother happy, he being one Philorenus alone, and enioying one only Aureola. And putcaſe thou wert dead Philorenus, & dead for no other purpoſe but to make thy brother happie in the higheſt degree: Oh how ſweete a death would ſuch a death be vnto thée! But yet thou mighſt be deceiued, for thou knoweſt, nay ſo knoweſt that thou canſt not doubt, but that life will be but a bitter life vnto him thou being without life, and ſo then mighſt thou by thy death procure to him either a bitter death or a life worſe then any death. What then reſteth thée miſerable wretch, if that thou canſt neither liue to thy minde, nor die to thy minde? Die liuing, and liue dying, and yéld thy heart to receiue each print of griefe; that thou maiſt alwaies die being ſorne with tormenting paine, and yet neuer be dead, leaſt thy plague rebound from thée to thy brother. And therefore I bid thee farewell Aureola, farewell, my brother muſt enioy thée, and I muſt ſuffer for you both.

After that he had ſo ſhut vp his complaint, as if he had ſigned it with the ſeale of death, he fell downe on the ground being vnable to ſtand on his feete any longer, and there he laie ſtrugling, as if ſoule and body wold [illegible]e parted, ſo ſtrong and vehement was the pange which pinched him. Inſomuch that

although

although I was loth to shew my selfe vnto him there,least he should know that I had heard and seene him, yet compassion becomming maister amongst my affections,for that he néeded helpe in that case, forced me to runne hastily vnto him to aide him. But he no sooner espied me, but leaped vp againe so suddeinly,that if I had not both séen and heard his former scrikes and teares, I would haue surely bene perswaded that he did but shew me a tumbling tricke, and that he had bene exercising his bodie to some acts of nimblenesse. And besides also, before I could salute him,by reason that I so maruelled at the straungenesse of this chaunge, he spake vnto me so chéerfully that I could scarce answer him for admiring at ỹ force which his loue towards me had suddeinly procured him. His legges were scarce able to hold his bodie, & seeing me, his heart commanded them to support him, his eyes which were so hidden with the teares which he shed, that no man could haue séene them, allwne as they beheld me, séemed to haue retalled the flouds that ranne out of them,and to haue in a moment swallowed them vp; and his face which did as it were swimme in teares,seemed to drinke vp the moysture at my comming, as the morning dewe vanisheth in the presence of Phœbus, whē he sendeth his golden beames from his firy chariot,to cherish the pleasant fruites of the earth after they haue wept, by reason of the darke coldnesse of the mirthlesse night. Wherefore I séeing that my brotherly brother was so loth to make mé acquainted with his passions, only because he would not giue me occasion of griefe, but kept it all to himselfe; I dissembled as much as I could,least I should by letting him know what I knew, quite discomfort him, and totally make him comfortlesse. And although by reason of that which I knewe of him,pittie caused such griefe in me for his discontent and passionate torment, that I thinke if he had not bene in place, I had sunke to the ground,for a stronger foundation to hold vp my distracted bodie,oppressed and waighed downe by the heauinesse of passing sorrow,then my legs which séemed to shake like the pillars of a Church that is falling, yet neuertheless

for that time, I plucked vp my ſpirits and though not ſo well able as he, yet as wel as I could, I diſſembled my paſſion and anſwered him as chéerfully as poſſibly I might; enterteining him with ſuch talke as I thought moſt expedient, to cauſe him not to miſdoubt of any thing. In ſo much that he neither thought that I had heard him, nor knew that I felt the paine which he himſelfe ſuffered. And after we had there walked an halfe houre or thereabout, we returned both of vs togither to the Court. And as we paſſed by the Counteſſe Verinas Gardaine, he eſpied the Counteſſe walking all alone, whereupon he beganne to vrge me, in any caſe not to let that occaſion ſlippe, but that I ſhould goe vnto her, and make her acquainted with the loue and affection betwéene me and her ſiſter Aureola, and that he would goe with me to beare mée company, and to perſwade the Counteſſe to conſent to the contracting of a marriage betwéene me and Aureola. He ſayd furthermore, conſidering the thrée moneths which Aureola appointed to haue the matter during ỳ time concealed, were expired, he had the day before ſpoken with the King concerning this matter, and that his maieſtie had promiſed him to be wholly ours in this poynt, as hée had euer before bene in many other; and had beſides tolde him ſome thinges which hée ſhould make relation off vnto the Counteſſe, concerning this match. And to tell the truth, hee grew ſo importunate to haue me goe to the Counteſſe in all haſte, that I knewe not how to ſhift off this readineſſe. But becauſe I had purpoſed to bring that to paſſe which I will by and by ſhew vnto you, I founde this excuſe to delaie our conference with the Counteſſe; That miſtreſſe Aureola for certaine cauſes had vrged mée to promiſe her, that I would not ſpeake vnto her ſiſter concerning any thing touching her, before I forewarned her, or let her know both that I wold do it, & the time when I would do it. Which promiſe (quoth I) being paſſed, I may not breake it. Whereupon he well contented, ſéemed to take my excuſe ſo well, that he rather liked of my vnwillingneſſe to go to the Counteſſe, then perſeuered to perſuade

me

me thereunto. So that we went both to our lodging, where, we began to read certaine Chronicles of the auncient estate of *Italy*; and things done in times past in the kingdom of *Naples*, to driue away the rest of the time till dinner were readie, that we might haue some auncient historie or other to delight the King and the Quéene withall while they dyned. For they toke such delight in hearing of their predecessours déeds and sayings, that wée could not haue done them a greater pleasure then to rehearse either some prettie saying, or some worthie act of such Kinges or Quénes as had before them swayed the scepter of *Naples*. But not to be that which I am loath to be, I meane tedious vnto you (noble princes and shepheardes) I will hasten to that which I euen now promised to let you knowe, concerning that which I had certeinly of ripe counsell in my heart concluded to doe, after I knew by my brothers passions that hée himselfe loued Aureola, and yet continually furthered my desire to his vttermost power.

For indéede I was fully resolued to leaue Aureola vnto him, and my selfe to the hazard of Fortune, and being so resolued, I performed no lesse. For the next morning I departed hence secretly from the Court, for *Cinqueni*, thinking to inquire whether I might heare any thing of my father, and to be certainly enformed whether he were slaine among the other vnhappie inhabitants, or by happe fledde, and so auoyded the furious slaughter which many suffered. But before I departed, on the couer lidde of a loking Glasse that was in my brothers Chamber windowe, I wrote him this farewell.

Philo ✶ to ✶ *Renus.*

THou which to decke by workeman formed art,
Serue to vnfold the cause which made me go:

And

And without leaue my brother leaue,and part,
From court,wherein my onely ioy doth grow.
Loue bade me to enioy my loue and ſtay,
And Loue commanded me to go away.

Selfe-loue would haue me ſtaie and meanes procure,
Loading my ſelfe with griefe,my ſelfe to eaſe:
Conſidering therefore well the matter ſure,
Selfe-loue doth bid me go my ſelfe to pleaſe.
For who elſe is my brother,but my ſelfe?
And tendring him,right tender I my ſelfe.

Then know,(my ſelfe)the cauſe which made me part
Was Loue, which warned me from Loue to ceaſe:
For of two loues my heart felt double ſmart,
One Loue gaue place,that th'other might increaſe,
Inioy thine *Aureola*,for I am gone,
And therefore gone,that ſhe ſhould be thine owne.

After my brother had miſſed me, marueilling where I ſhould be ſo long, he went to his chamber to driue away the time, and to deceiue the tedious houres with ſome kinde of reading exercile, thinking that I had bene ſomwhere abroad in the fields in my ſolitary haunt, and that I would ere long returne to the court. And leaning on his windowe, he chanced to ſpie ſomething written on the couer lidde of his loking glaſſe, which he might eaſily do, by reaſon that I had written with red incke, the lidde being of white iuorie. And ſo taking it in his hand, he read the verſes which I had left there, to yéeld a reaſon for my ſodeine departure. But he being raiſhed into admiration, and by admiration lead into aſtoniſhment, fell in an extaſie. Which extaſie he being by himſelfe alone, and therefore depriued of helpe, in ſuch a caſe required, had almoſt brought him to his laſt home. Yet after he had a long time laine in a traunce, he came at laſt to himſelfe again, and then began to curſe & raile at Fortune for [illegible], ſo partially

with

with him, in reuealing that vnto me, the reuealing of which onely could make him miserable. In so much that now he knew that which before he not once mistrusted, to wit, that I the other morning had in the wood heard him lament his ill fortune, whereby I knew that which I also neuer dreamed off, concerning his louing of Aureola. But so greeuously did he take my absence, that all his bodie receiued the disposition that is caused by a disquiet soule; and his face became the verie subiect of sorrow, his countenance being mournfull, and his eyes being growne to be the verie seates of tears. In so much, that whereas no man as yet could suspect or dreame that I should be so gone as I was, yet seeing him so wofully fashioned, straightwaies iudged that he could not be so altered but vppon such a cause; and whereas they should haue knowne that he was so distempered by reason of my so being gone, they contrarily knew of my being gone, by reason that he was so distempered. To be short, he was so tortured by the butcheries of *Greece*, that he was almost depriued of his wits, and the vse of his vnderstanding. And the rather because hee was brought in doubtful resolution, whether he should leaue Aureola and follow me, or leaue me and comfort Aureola, lest raunging after me through vnknowne places, he should both lose me, and himselfe also. He therfore being drawen now to this conclusiõ, now to that, hung in the aire houering betweẽ heauen & earth, not knowing whether he were best by flight reach to the one, or by falling come to the other. So that his mind being thus suspended, he perpended the reasons for both parts, which were most forcible to perswade him to the one or the other: yet in such order, that neglecting fully his owne case, as one altogither careless of his owne welfare, he referred all matters to the effecting of that which seemed most expedient and necessary to make me happie, and to worke my felicitie. In so much that he began to consider, that if chaunce he should haue left Aureola and committed himselfe to the laboursome seeking & vncertaine finding of me, the louing gentle woman might haue taken both our absence so heauily, that

ſhe might haue thereby fallen into ſome dangerous ſickneſſe, and perchance remedileſſe. Well (quoth he) putcaſe ſhe ſhould die, were it not better that ſhe ſhould die, then that I ſhould ſuffer my brother to liue in diſpaire, to runne rounde about the worlde, to carry hell with him whereſoeuer hée goeth, hauing his affections like furies and fiends, tearing and renting his brotherlike heart, to irrigate the barreine grounde with millions of teares, to diſturbe the guiltleſſe ayre with lamentable ſcrikes and cries, accompanied with ſighes and ſobbes, and in a word, to be alwayes dying, and yet neuer die? Death is the locke that ſhutteth vp miſerie, and endeth all calamitie and trouble. If Aureola then die, O happy ſhe! but vnhappie I! Nay my ſweete brother, thriſe vnhappie thou. For no doubt if Aureola ſhould die, the paine which thou ſhouldeſt ſuſtaine, the griefe which ſhould moleſt thy ſoule, and torment which ſhould rauiſh thée in the very gulfe of all veration, would ſo farre in extremitie paſſe the anguiſh wherein thou doeſt now pine, that it would be greater then the paine which cauſeth the ſoule to part from the body. Why then I will rather remaine by Aureola, and ſo both ſaue her life, thine, and mine owne. Though ſcarce mine owne, ſéeing that I ſhall not be able to liue he being abſent. And what will he thinke, nay what will all the worlde ſay, but that I forſooth for loue of my brother, entertaine his loue, and that I ſo loue him, that to ſhewe my loue towardes him, I muſt néedes loue his Ladie, and ſo defraud him of that wherein his chiefe felicitie conſiſteth; the iewell of his heart, the treaſure of his deſires, the obiect of his delight, the ſubiect of his conceites, the hold of his hope, and the onely and chiefe pillar of his life, and cauſe of his being, ſwéete Aureola, worthie to be all this vnto him, he deſeruing to be as much vnto her: none of them both owing no leſſe one to the other. As he was thus quite turning from that minde to the other, and reſoluing to leaue all to follow me, the beames of Aureolas beautie reuerberating the windowe wherein he laie muſing what he might beſt do, warned him that that ſonne was in the garden, whoſe

light

light was able to striue with the rayons of Phœbus for force, seeing that his beames may well shine vpon mẽ, not in them: whereas the bright lines that glister from the golden forehead of Aureola, did penetrate mens bodies, & shine not vpon them onely, but also within them, and through them. He therefore espying Aureola walking in the garden all alone, wept that he sawe not me with her, saying. O sacred powers of heauen, seeing that your Deities haue beene diuinely worshipped by me since my cradle, why hate ye poore Philorenus your seruant so? that the sight which ought to be vnto his eyes as gold to the couetous man, is vnto him as poyson to them that wish to liue long? Not for that I take any disgrace by the gracious presence of Aureola, but that my ioy is eclipsed, when I behold her without him, by her who seemeth borne to be inseparably ioyned with her, as white vnto snow, colde to yce, and to vse a more familiar comparion as beautie to Aureola. Hauing so said, as carried away with a suddeine strong gale of winde, he hasted to the gardeine, and hauing passed the curtesies vsed in salutation and greeting, being asked for me (for she knew him by reason of a secrete token which we had giuen to onely her to discerne him from me, & me from him) he vp and told her all the matter concerning my suddein departure, yet so colouring the cause thereof, that she thought that I was gone because I dispaired that she should loue him better then me. For he thought that so she might be moued to pittie, and by pittie to sharpen her affection, which should haue encreased her loue towards me. Whereas if he had let her know the true cause of my absence, that I was gone to leaue her to be his, she might haue bene moued to disdaine me, which disdaine should haue nourished the fire which was kindeled in her breast by the affection which shee bore him, and so might shee haue allured him to leaue mee in my pilgrimage and enioy her, to displease whome, hee did count it a sacriledge.

But she construing of the matter as my moste carefull brother, and his brotherlyke carefulnesse had enformed, and

being subiect to that custome which by nature is an vnsepa-
rable companion to the desires of all women, I mean to wish
and couet that which seemeth almost vnpossible, and to long
for such things as cannot be gotten or verie hardly had; now
she heard that I was gone no man knew where, whereas be-
fore her loue inclined rather towards my brother then to me,
she was so ravished with desire to be with me, that she pre-
sently concluded to her selfe in hart, to take the pains to seeke
me; and although she did conceale the same vnto him, and dis-
sembled the passion which she felt by reason of my absence, by
words whilest he was by her; yet by deede sufficiently after-
ward shewed it vnto all the world. For after she was separa-
ted from him by the hastinesse of her resolution, to execute
that which she had purposed, she went to her chamber, where
after she had made her handkercheffe drunke, with sipping vp
and drinking in the teares which abundantly issued from out
her eyes, most fertilly yeelding frute of the seedes of sorrow
that had bin sowne in them; and having astonished the stones
and wals with the admirable strikes, and moued the lifelesse
pictures to pitie that hung in her chamber, she empouerished
her rich apparel by laying it off, & enriched her sisters Cokes
knaues poore cloathes, putting them on her inwarde bodie, and
so making prouision of nothing but a knife to conquere For-
tunes enuy, if chance she would go about to make her mise-
rable in the highest degree by prolonging her life, when as
she could not liue but discontented, she committed her selfe to
her iourney, and her iourny to the Gods, calling vppon their
Deities to be directed in her way. O ye sacred powers (called
she) that in heauen take care of vs poore mortals, who wholly
depend vpon your fauour & disfauour, if euer my vowes haue
bene acceptable vnto you, and my offerings pleasing, let me
now haue you tender my case and pittie my estate. For if I
haue not of wicked wantonnesse or idle lusts, framed my selfe
a fit subiect for loue, and made my minde a Tennis court for
the bals of fancie, to be tossed to and fro in it, but rather haue
bene conquered by force of not to be resisted loue; then allow

me

me to loue and maintaine my loue in ſpight of Fortune. Let your imperiall power command the windes by their blaſt to guide my ſteppes, and by my ſteppes to bring my bodie to the bleſſed place that is made happie by the excellent burthen of my vertuous Philorenus. O thou lofty coach-man of the ſtately ſkie, in whoſe heauenly bodie are great hidden Deities, let thy cheriſhing beames exhilarate no place but that which ſerueth to ſupport the waight of my wofull and heauie Philorenus, therefore heauie, becauſe mine. That thy coruſcant rayons falling down as a golden ſhewre of raine ouer him, may be as a token and marke whereby I may direct the courſe of my voyage. Laſtly, O ye ſtarres whoſe twinkling pride doth bewray the ſtatelineſſe of the graund-court and high pallace made by Nature, and challenged by the ſoueraigne Gods to be the habitable and lodging for their Deities, help poore Aureola, helpe diſtreſſed her. And when Phœbus hath ſtabled his fierie horſes all weary with daily toyle, and put on you the charge of guarding and watching the ſacred ſeales of heauenly powers, then take chriſtall wings to your fiery bodie, and flie through the aire vnto my ſoules Philorenus, that as hée ſhall vnderſtand by your comming, Aureola, euen poore ſhe, is haſting towards him, ſo I, wretched I, (nay moſt happie I, if euer ſo fortunate as once again to behold him, the paragon of vertue and ſole obiect of my conceites) following the light which enuironeth your bodies, may be brought vnto him, euen him whoſe ſweet ſelfe onely is worthie to be ſought for of Aureola. Finally, chaſte and faire Diana, thou that knoweſt the cleanneſſe of my thoughtes, and art acquainted with the furious aſſaults wherwith Cupid hath battered the bulwark of my chaſte minde, and ſhaken the fort of my conſtant purpoſe to inuiolable chaſtitie; yet O mighty goddeſſe, ſéeing that I haue not filthily or diſhoneſtly nouriſhed fancy with ſhamefull hope of luſt, but am rather ouercome by ſuch not to be

that if it had bene attempted againſt ſome goddeſſe ſhe had bene forced to yéeld. I beſéech thée to march before me in

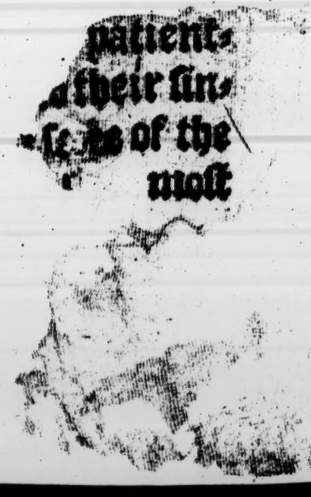
night walkes, that being comforted by

thy diuine presence, I be not affrighted by the ougly grimnesse of the darke night, and so disuaded, or rather discouraged to passe through woods & dales after my Philorenus. O sweete Philorenus, O beautifull Philernus, O vertuous Philorenus! What wood is made so happie by thy mishap, as to shrowde thy face so faire from the heate of scorching Apollo? What greene is made so fortunate by thy misfortune as to become the bed whereon thou doest rest thy wearied bodie? What lake is growne to be so blessed by thy curse, as to refresh thy tender stomacke, falling downe thy alablaster throate into thy marble belly? Blessed be that wood, that greene, and that lake, which serueth for his scarfe, for his bedde and his drinke; seeing that Nature hath wished Fortune procured, and the gods graunted them that honourable fauour.

Thus Aureola inuoking the Goddes, and calling vppon heauen, betoke her selfe to her vncertaine iourney. She wist not which way to goe, nor whither to goe, but went being guided with loue, and accompanied with hope. In the meane time my brother hauing bene informed that she was secretly departed the Court, staied not to heare what rumours were spredde abroad in the Court of her going, but least he might be accused of negligence and carelesnesse of the welfare of so good a brother, incontinently went from *Naples*, but so that he toke his leaue of the King and Queene, promising to returne his brother being found, vnto them again; hauing acquainted them with the true cause of my so leauing the Courte, without euen anie of their Maiesties knowledge.

Thus you see (Noble Princes and shepheardes) howe those whome Nature seemed to haue made to liue togither and be as one, were nowe by Fortune separated so farre asunder, that there was little (I will not say hope, for euerie one of vs were pricked forward with the spurre of hope. being warmed with desire,) but likelihood that neuer we should see one another againe. Aureola [illegible] stood by a shepheard that there was ab[illegible]es iourny from

being [illegible]
then ple[illegible]


patient
their sin
of the
most